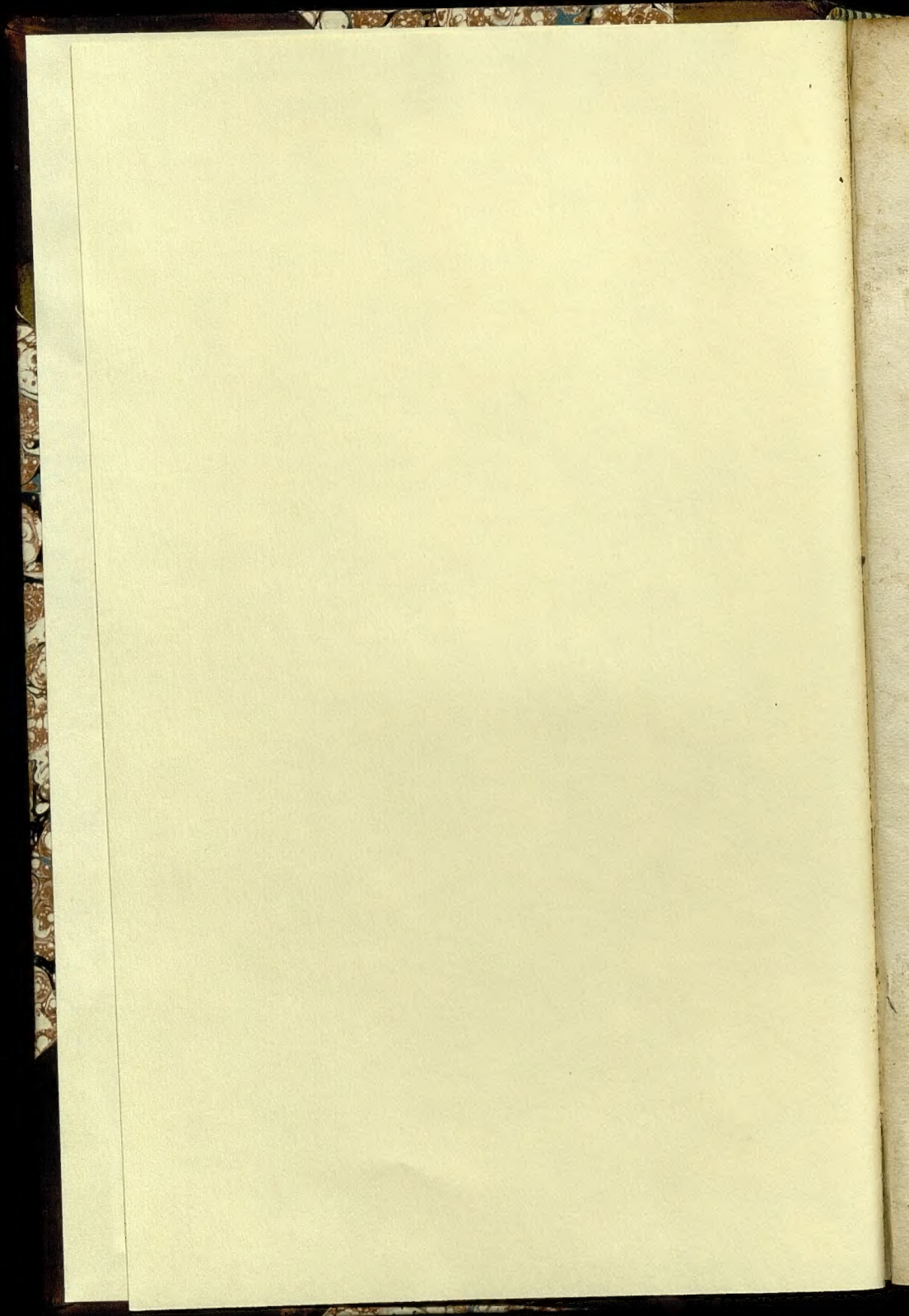


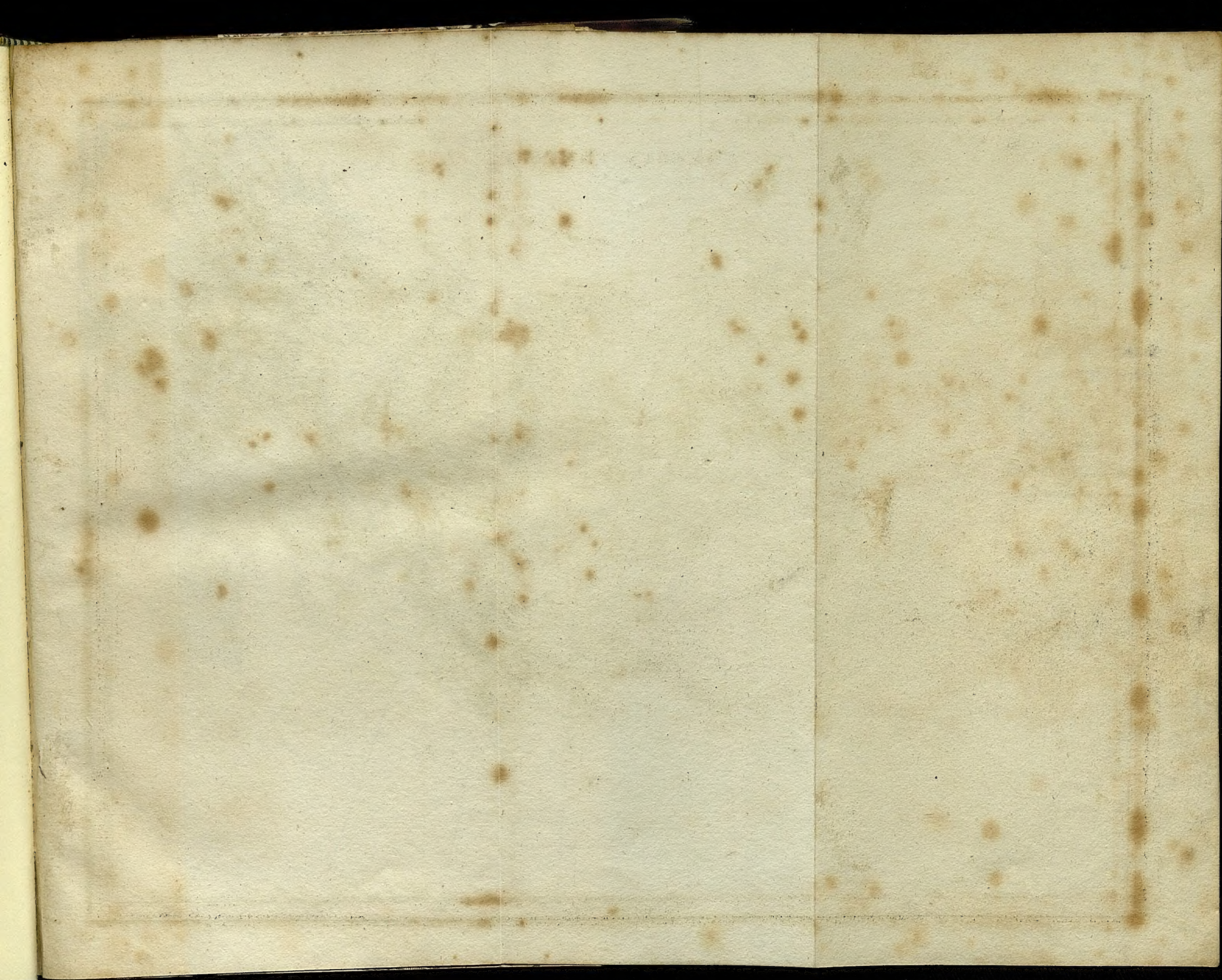


Map folding - hand coloured  
8 - hand coloured plates.





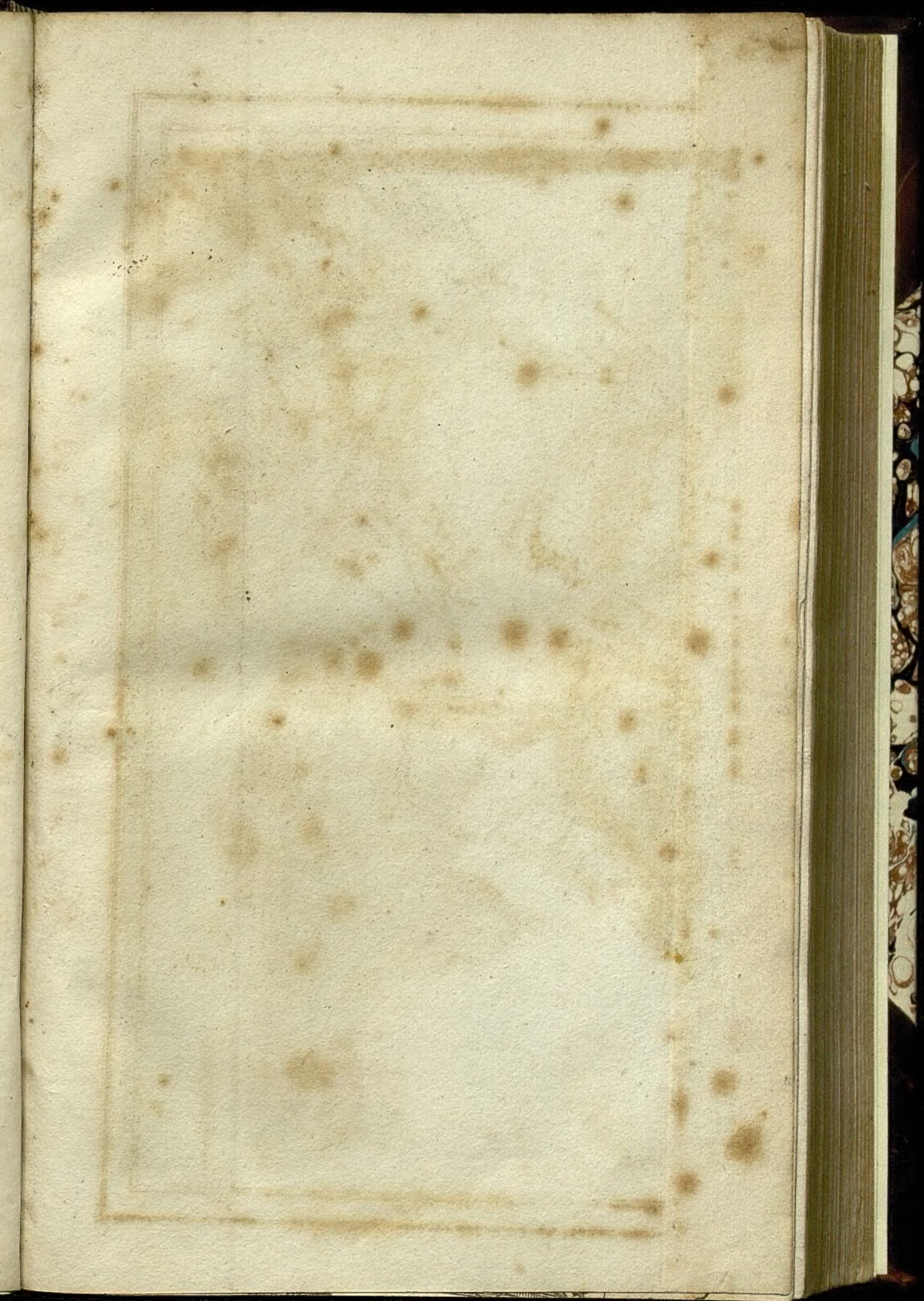
















*View of Moscow before the Conflagration!*





# RUSSIA;

BEING A COMPLETE

*PICTURE of that EMPIRE;*

Including a full description of  
 THEIR GOVERNMENT, LAWS, RELIGION,  
 Commerce, Manners, Customs, &c.

WITH THE

*History of Russia,*

CIVIL, MILITARY, AND ECCLESIASTICAL,

From the earliest period to the present time;

CONTAINING

*Ample Memorials of the Reign*

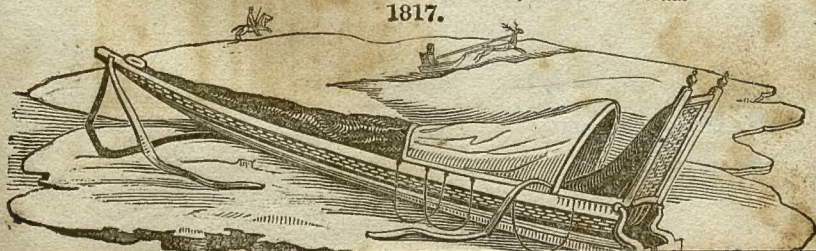
OF THE ILLUSTRIOUS

**EMPEROR ALEXANDER I.**

By C. G. HUNTER, Esq.

**London:**

Published by T. CRABB, 15, John Street, Blackfriars Road.  
 1817.







ПРЕЗИДЕНТСКАЯ  
БИБЛИОТЕКА  
КОЛЛЕКЦИЯ РЕДКИХ КНИГ

№ 2147



## ADVERTISEMENT.



At the present eventful period, the attention is naturally directed to those States and Empires which have been eminently distinguished during the late convulsed state of Europe.

Russia, which prior to the reign of Peter the Great, was little known in this country, has now acquired a splendour and renown equal to any of the most celebrated nations of antiquity.

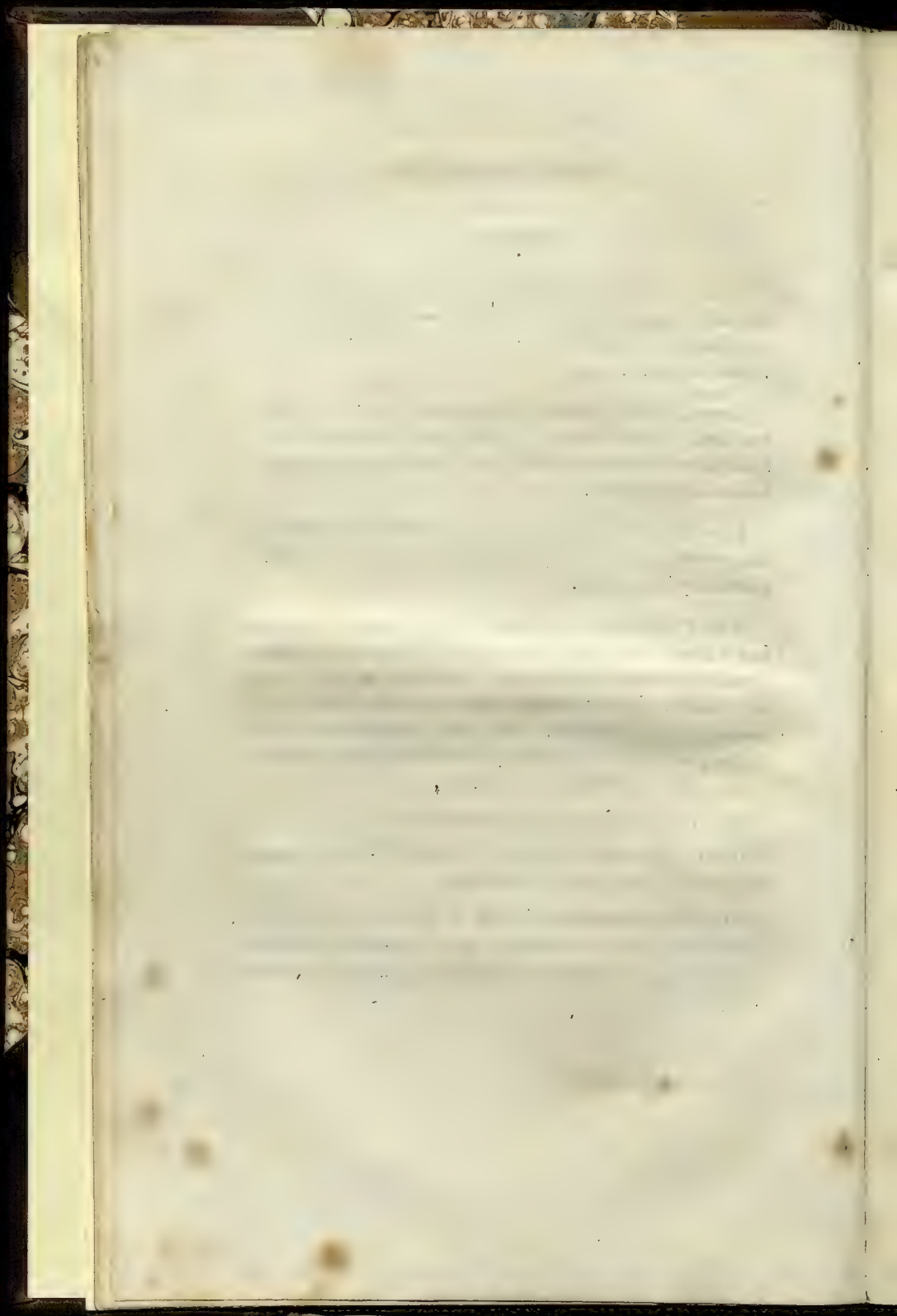
In offering to public notice an authentic account of this great empire, it is presumed it cannot fail to prove peculiarly interesting.

The Proprietors are sensible that English literature has within a few years been enriched with many valuable productions relative to Russia. To condense every thing material in those volumes, and to concentrate every circumstance connected with the Geographical, Statistical, and Political History of this extensive domain, is the object the Editor has in view.

The political and commercial relation between Great Britain and Russia must unquestionably tend to render the present work highly interesting.

It will be interspersed with a variety of interesting anecdotes; and embellished with numerous coloured Engravings, illustrative of the History, with an accurate Map.







# CONTENTS.

## CHAP. I.

<i>Geographical description of Russia—Climate</i>	Page
<i>—Soil—Natural productions—Manners—</i>	
<i>Customs and Amusements</i>	1

## CHAP. II.

<i>Government, Jurisprudence, and Religion of</i>	
<i>the Russian Empire—Literature, &amp;c.</i>	24

## CHAP. III.

<i>Description of the chief Cities and Towns of</i>	
<i>Russia in Europe</i>	39

## CHAP. IV.

<i>Climate—Soil—Produce, of Asiatic Russia</i>	49
--	----

## CHAP. V.

<i>History of KAMTSCHATKA, and the</i>	
<i>neighbouring Country—Russian expedition</i>	
<i>to Kamtschatka—Manners and Customs of</i>	
<i>the Natives, &amp;c.</i>	52

## CHAP. VI.

<i>Religion of the Natives of Kamtschatka—Ma-</i>	
<i>gicians—Feasts—Ceremonies, &amp;c.</i>	74

## CHAP. VII.

<i>Marriage—Customs—Education—Diseases</i>	
<i>and Remedies—Funeral Ceremonies, &amp;c.</i>	86

## CHAP. VIII.

<i>Account of the Nation of the Koriacs</i>	91
---	----

## CHAP. IX.

<i>Account of the nation of Kouriles—The</i>	
<i>Mongul, Kalmuc, and other Tartar tribes</i>	105

## CHAP. X.

<i>History of the Revolutions of the Russian</i>	
<i>Empire</i>	129



## DIRECTIONS

FOR PLACING THE PLATES.

	Page.
<i>Moscow and Map of Russia before the Title.</i>	
<i>Winter walking Dress</i> .....	7
<i>Peasant</i> .....	9
<i>Peasant's Wife</i> .....	18
<i>Merchant's Wife</i> .....	21
<i>The Abbot</i> .....	28
<i>Don Cossack</i> .....	36
<i>St. Petersburg</i> .....	156
<i>Officer of Imperial Guards</i> .....	266



## RUSSIA IN EUROPE.

### CHAP I.

*Geographical description of Russia—Climate—Soil  
—Natural productions—Manners—Customs and  
Amusements.*

THE Russian Empire may justly be viewed as the most extended that ever existed. Its length, according to the best and most approved Authorities, is nine thousand six hundred and eighty four miles; and its breadth two thousand four hundred. It is computed to contain four million one hundred thousand square miles—a space nearly three times the extent of the Roman Empire.

Russia in Europe is situated between 44° and 72° north latitude, and from 23° to 68° east longitude. It is bounded on the east by Asiatic Russia: on the north by the Frozen Ocean; by Tartary and Turkey on the south; and on the west, by the Baltic, Prussia, and Sweden.

The climate of Russia is extremely various. In the northern regions, from the 60th degree of latitude to its remotest boundaries, the cold is peculiarly severe. According to Dr. King, who was Chaplain to the British Factory at St. Petersburg, and other writers, the effects of the cold atmosphere are such



as greatly to incommode travellers, especially those inhabiting the southern parts of Europe. A modern writer, the Rev. W. Anderson, makes the following observations on this subject.

“ Corn seldom ripens beyond the 60th degree of latitude. Even at Petersburg there are only two months in the year, in which snow may not be expected, and the thermometer sometimes sinks 65 degrees below the freezing point. Usually two thirds of the year are rain or snow ; and in that capital the shortest day is not above five hours and a half long. In the eastern Provinces the same degrees of latitude are found much colder than the western : a circumstance that must be ascribed to the influence of the mountains, covered with perpetual snow, which separate Siberia from the southern parts of Asia. In these northern regions, the atmosphere is dry even in snow ; and while the severe weather is not prejudicial to human life, it affords the means of a vast internal commerce ; as the frost no sooner sets in, than sledge-ways, covered with carriages, are opened from the gulf of Archangel, to the mouth of the Don, and from the banks of the Irtysh, to those of the Neva. In the central regions of Russia, from the 55th, to the 60th degree of latitude, though the winter is severe, the fruits of the orchard ripen. From the latitude of 50 to 55 degrees, the temperature is mild and agreeable ; while in the southern districts the plants of China flourish in the open air.”

The Russians, notwithstanding the inclemency of the clime, find comfort in this method of procuring artificial heat. An oven constructed upon a peculiar principle, diffuses a general heat throughout the cot-



tages of the peasantry. The houses of persons of independent circumstances, are so well protected both without doors and within, that they are seldom heard to complain of the effects of the cold. The method of warming the houses in Russia, is by an oven constructed with several flues ; and the country abounds with wood, which constitutes the common fuel. The ovens are instrumental in not only warming the house ; but serve also to dress the food of the inhabitants. When the thickest of the black smoke is evaporated, the chimney is shut up, to retain all the rest of the heat in the chamber ; by this means the heat is preserved in a room for twenty-four hours, without the necessity of adding fresh fuel ; and a sufficient degree of warmth is imparted.

Russia abounds with plains of great extent. Some of them are covered with forests of birch, fir, and pine ; those are chiefly situated toward the south ; the northern plains furnishing little but brush wood. One of the best watered plains, called " the Barabinian Stepp," occupies a space of four hundred miles in length, and three hundred in breadth. Another vast level is supposed to have formed the bed of an immense mass of water ; which, " In consequence of the bursting of the Thracian Bosphorus, flowed into the Mediterranean."

The soil of Russia is diversified. In some parts it is rich and fertile ; in others it is sterile ; the fine pasturage on the banks of the Volga, form a striking contrast to the marshes adjacent to the Frozen Sea. Those fields also which are washed by the river Don, are pre-eminently luxuriant in their produce.

The chief mountains in this empire, are the " Zimnopoulos," generally denominated " the girdle of the



earth." The Circassian mountains extend three hundred and fifty miles; and are covered with snow. The mountains of Taurida exhibit a delectable scene to the view; forming the most romantic appearance; on the declivities, goats and sheep are seen feeding on the herbage.

The principal rivers in Russia, are the Volga, the Don, the Dneiper, and the Neva.

The Volga, esteemed the greatest of European rivers, has its source in the mountains of Valdai; it flows through the chief provinces of the empire; and the town of Astracan, in Asiatic Russia, is situated at the mouth of this river.

Mr. Pope, in his poem of "Windsor Forest," makes mention of this river.

"Let Volga's banks with iron squadrons shine."

The Volga abounds with excellent fish; it empties itself into the Caspian Sea.

The Don has its source in the lake of Ivariofskey; it pursues its course for eight hundred miles; and falls into the sea of Azof.

The Dneiper affords little advantage to the inland navigation of the empire; it flows into the Black Sea.

The Neva is but a small river; it has its source in the lake Ladoga, and after a course of forty miles, falls into the gulf of Crenstadt. Upon this river, an annual market is held, which lasts for three days.

The Caspian Sea is very extensive, being seven hundred miles in length. "It has no tide; the bottom is shell sand; toward the north the shore is low, and the water stagnates." The productions of the Caspian, are herrings and salmon.



The lake of Ladoga is supposed to be the largest in Europe: it is one hundred and thirty feet in length. Peter the Great ordered a canal to be cut along the banks of this lake, from the Volkhof to the Neva.

There are very few mineral springs in Russia; the chief are those of Sarepta. They are strongly impregnated with iron.

Russia is abundant in mineral productions; and there are quarries which furnish alabaster, granite, porphyry, and white marble equal to the finest parzan. In some parts, alum, sal-ammoniac, salt-petre, sulphur, and vitriol, are found in great abundance.

There are gold, silver, iron, copper, and lead mines in this country. In the mountains of Olonetz was discovered, in 1739, a gold mine; but, upon working, it was ascertained, that it was little productive, and therefore it was abandoned.

The largest gold mines are in the Uralian mountains. Those mines were explored in 1764

The most considerable silver mine is at Shlangenbeng; and those mines productive of lead are situated at Nestschink. It has been computed, that at least seventy thousand men are employed in working the above mines. Copper is found in the mountains of Olonetz. The science of mineralogy was never patronised until the time of Peter the Great, who, in 1719, founded a college for promoting the study of it. Salt is a very essential article of the produce of this country. It abounds with salt mines, lakes, and saline springs.

The extensive forests of Russia exhibit a pleasing



display of sylvan scenery. In them is to be found the fir, the pine, and the cedar tree, as also alder, oak, and cherry trees,

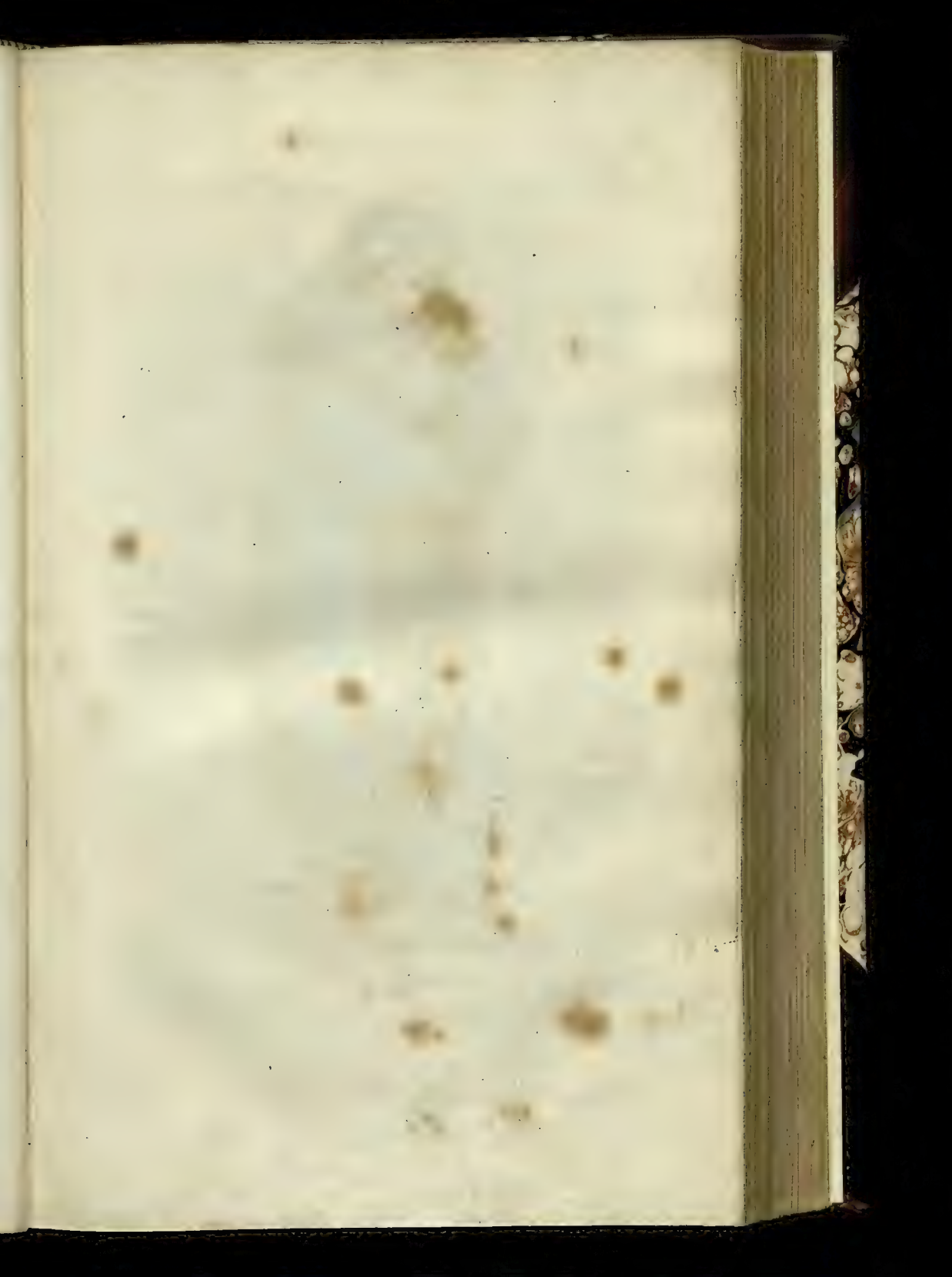
The gardens abound with fine and luxuriant fruits. With a singular spirit of liberality, many persons of rank convert their gardens into places of public entertainment, to which all people of decent appearance are at liberty to enter.

Among the quadrupeds of this country the lynx is eminently distinguished. It has acquired great celebrity on account of its brilliant eye, which has become proverbial. This animal, although a beast of prey, is seldom known to attack the human species. Hyænas, wolves, bears, and foxes, are also to be found in Russia. The camel and dromedary were, prior to the reign of Peter the Great, chiefly employed as in the eastern countries, for the conveyance of merchandise; subsequent to which period horses are in general requisition. The Russian horse is a fine animal, but rather small in size.

The extreme severity of the weather occasions every species of land fowl to emigrate during the winter, but they return to enjoy the pleasing but short period of the spring. Their flight is to the southward.

In the different rivers of this widely-extended country, cod, salmon, and sturgeon are found; from the roe of the latter fish is manufactured the caviase, which, for its singularly exquisite flavour, forms an admired viand at the tables of the nobility. The beluga, a fish resembling the sturgeon, contains a stone, which the Russians highly esteem in a medical point of view, as being, when scraped and mixed









*Winter Walking Dress.*

*London Published by The Grubbs & Co. 21, Piccadilly, 1817.*



with water, an infallible specific for the diseases of children.

The Russians are in general possessed of a hardy and vigorous constitution, peculiarly patient when suffering fatigue, and in the field of battle, as recent events have fully demonstrated, regardless of danger. In person they nearly resemble the English and Scotch; there appears to be a slight defect in the organ of sight, owing most probably to the heavy and long continued falls of snow. The Russian dress in the higher classes of society consists of a large fur cloak, fur boots or shoes, a black fur or velvet bonnet, which entirely envelops the ears. The ladies are greatly attached to the embellishment of their persons: they are not sparing in the use of that well known auxiliary to female beauty—rouge. Gold chains, bracelets, strings of pearls, and elegant rings, are the costly appendages of their toilette. The nature of the climate precludes that variety of dress which is displayed by the females of London and Paris. The Russian lady is compelled to confine herself to a long habit, closely fitted and adjusted to the shape, and over this dress she throws a large scarf, which gracefully hangs over the shoulders.

The peasants are clothed in a coarse robe of drugget, or of sheep skin, with the wool turned inward. This robe reaches down to the knee, and is bound round the waist by a sash; to this is added trowsers of thick linen; and, instead of stockings, woollen or flannel cloth wrapped round the leg; the feet are covered with sandals, which are woven from the strips of a pliant bark, and fastened by



things twined round. All classes of persons wear their hair combed straight, without powder. The distinction of dress, which marks the lower order of persons in Russia, forms a striking contrast to the neat and even gay appearance of the artisans, mechanics, and labouring poor in England, on a Sunday. The emperor Alexander, on his late visit to this country, was greatly astonished at this circumstance. When in Hyde Park, he perceived an immense assemblage of well dressed persons;—"Where," exclaimed the Emperor, "are the common people?"

A Russian village affords a curious appearance; it is entirely destitute of trees. The houses are formed of wood, by means of beams laid one across the other; the spaces between are filled up with flax or moss. You enter this rude habitation into a sort of hall or kitchen, in which are the requisite domestic necessaries. From thence you proceed to the family room, which is heated with a very large stove, made nearly red-hot even in mild weather. Benches of wood are fixed to the wainscot all round the room, and in the centre is placed a table. In one corner is suspended the Obross, or object of the Russians' religious veneration. In the houses of the rich a lamp is kept perpetually burning; but in those of the poor the lamp is lighted only on holydays.

The dwellings of the opulent are built of birch and stone, the heat is conducted into each room by means of stoves or flues, which is guarded by double windows. A coarse representation of some favourite saint is to be seen in every house.







*A Peasant.*

The food of the Russian peasant consists of black rye bread, salt fish, bacon, mushrooms, and a peculiar sort of *olio*, made of fresh or salt meat, rye flour, seasoned with garlic and onions. So partial is the Russian to the latter articles, that he makes them an ingredient even in his bread, which is also rendered still more palatable by rancid oil. Mushrooms are very much esteemed. That eminent traveller, Mr. Coxe, observes, "I seldom entered a cottage but I saw a great quantity of them; nor did I ever pass a market, but I was astonished at their vast abundance, and of all colours, white, black, brown, yellow, green, and pink." The common drink of the peasantry is a fermented liquor, made by pouring warm water on rye, or barley-meal. As for spirituous liquors, whiskey, which is distilled from malt, is the most esteemed.

A complacent resignation to their situation in life marks the character of the Russian peasant: and amidst his labours and privations he habitually exhibits a cheerfulness of mind truly admirable. Economy is another characteristic. However scanty his income, he reserves sufficient to secure him from want. The lowest of the labouring poor are enabled, by their active industry, to procure wages sufficient frequently to indulge even to excess in drinking his favourite whiskey. "Enjoyment is the grand concern, the main object of all activity—the great spur to competition, the pivot on which the daily course of life at Petersburg turns." There is something peculiarly pleasing in contemplating that hilarity which sweetens the labour of the Russian kind: he carols, laughs, and drinks, and is happy.



A happy volatility, and a thoughtlessness peculiar to himself, accompany him through life. Among the middle and higher classes a degree of luxurious enjoyment is exhibited. The merchant devotes the forenoon to business; he sits down to dinner generally at two in the afternoon, though some, in imitation of the English merchants, dine as late as five.

One of the primary amusements of the Russian commonalty is the singing of national and popular ballads; their extreme simple but melodious tunes, the musical science, and well-formed organs of the people, produce a pleasing effect.

It is very common with the fashionable inhabitants of Petersburg to make excursions on the water. They have, to enhance the pleasure of the party, a band of expert singers, who sweetly warble the Russian ballads. Among the inhabitants of a nation so naturally attached to conviviality, it must be naturally supposed, that dancing forms a principal amusement. "No popular dance can be more expressive and diverting than the national one, commonly called the Dove dance. It is generally performed by one couple, who stand facing each other at some distance, seemingly making love; and, with energetical pantomimical gestures, by turns sue, reject, importune, disdain, and comply." Of the national music, a German writer, who was well acquainted with it, thus speaks:—"The general music (says Stœhlin) that prevails among the common people of Russia, from the Duna to the Amur and the Frozen Ocean, consists of one species of simple melody, which admits of infinite variation, according to the ability of the singer, or the custom

of the several provinces in this extensive empire. The words of the songs are mostly in prose, and often extempore, according to the immediate invention or recollection of the singer ; perhaps an antient legend, the history of an enormous giant, a declaration of love, a dialogue between a lover and his mistress, a murder, or a beautiful girl. Sometimes they are merely letters and syllables, metrically arranged, but seldom in rhyme, and adapted to this general air : these latter words are chiefly used by mothers in singing to their children : while boors, at the same time, perform their national dance to the same tune, accompanied with instrumental music. The subject of the song also frequently alludes to the former adventures of the singer, or his present situation : and the peasants will adopt the topics of their common discourse, and their disputes with each other, to this general air ; which altogether forms an extraordinary effect, and leads one to suppose that they chaunt their ordinary conversation."

Name-days and birth-days are celebrated in Russia with great festivities among all ranks of people. The relations and friends of the parties are assembled ; balls and assemblies, music and dancing, amuse the happy circle. The games in practice among the common people are of various kinds. The most common amusement is the swing, which is resorted to as a recreation at all times, but more especially at the grand festival of Easter. There are three sorts of swings ; one kind has a vibrating motion, others perpendicular, and a third sort are placed in an horizontal direction. The perpendicular swings are constructed in the following manner :



On the top of two high posts is an axle, having two pair of poles fixed in its centre. Each of those poles have at the extremities a seat suspended to a moveable axis, by turning of which all the seats move round in a perpendicular circle. The horizontal swing is composed of chairs, chariots, sledges, wooden horses, goats, swans, &c. These being fastened at the end of long poles, are forced round in an horizontal circle. Adjacent to where the swings are fixed, booths are erected, in which coarse dramatic pieces are performed, the performance seldom exceeds half an hour, and the price of admission is such as to accommodate the poorest of the people.

The game of foot-ball, so common in all countries, is very prevalent in Russia. A large ball, stuffed with feathers, is kicked about; and he who succeeds in picking it up with his hands amidst the contest of the feet, carries off a destined prize.

The pugilistic art and wrestling is practised as an amusement, but not as in England for promoting gambling. In winter, it is adopted as a very good expedient for warming the blood. Boxing and wrestling is to be seen in all the streets, but carried on with a spirit of perfect good humour.

Boxing is carried on in a manner different from that of other countries. Three or four hundred people assemble for this purpose; and, having divided themselves into two parties, each party selects a chief, who calls out the combatants, who do not strip. They are furnished with thick leather gloves. In striking, they advance the left foot and side, stretch the left arm to repel the blows of the opponent, keeping the right swinging at some distance

from the other. They hit in a circular direction at the face and head, but never attack the breast, or sides. No sooner does one of the champions fall to the ground, than the battle ceases: an admirable precaution to prevent any serious accident.

Bathing is a favourite recreation of the Russians. There are bathing-houses opened for the lower classes, which are much resorted to: the admission price amounts to only a few copecs, analogous to English half-pence. There are also vapour-baths for the accommodation of the more wealthy inhabitants. Those baths are constructed in the following manner: The bath room has a large vaulted oven, which is so strongly heated, that the stones which form the upper part of it become glowing hot. To augment the heat, water is sprinkled on them, and by this process the room is immediately filled with vapour.

Sir Nathaniel Wraxall, who entered when at Petersburg one of these vapour-baths, says, "That the bathing is promiscuous, there being more than two hundred persons of both sexes in the same bath: there are indeed separate places for the men and women, but they seem regardless of this distinction, and sit or bathe promiscuously, quite naked." To promote perspiration still more, it is a common practice for the bather to be gently beaten with dry bunches of leaf, or twigs of birch, and then rubbed down with woollen cloths. Almost all the hospitals and public institutions are provided with vapour-baths.

An inexhaustible source of amusement is found in



the ice-hills, which are resorted to in the Russian carnival or fair. Every ice-hill is formed of a scaffolding erected upon the frozen river, near thirty feet high, with a platform at the top, the ascent to which is by a ladder. From the summit, a sloping plain of boards, near four yards broad and thirty long, descends to the superficies of the river. Upon these boards, square masses of ice, four inches thick, which, being smoothed with the axe, and laid close to each other, are sprinkled with water, by which means they adhere to the board and to one another, and form an inclined plane of clear ice. From the bottom of this plain the snow is removed for a space of two hundred yards, and the breadth of four, upon the level bed of the river; and the sides of this course, as well as the sides and top of the scaffolding, are ornamented with firs and pines. Each person, being provided with a sledge, ascends the ladder, and having gained the summit, being seated in his sledge, at the upper extremity of the inclined plane, down which it glides with great rapidity; the velocity of the descent carries it more than one hundred yards upon the ice. At the end of the course there is another ice-hill like the former, which commences where the other terminates, and the person thus immediately mounts again, and in the same manner glides down the other plain of ice. It is a curious circumstance, that boys will skait down these ice-hills upon one skait only.

At Oranienbaum, a few miles from Petersburg, there is a singularly constructed building, designated "The Flying Mountain." It is formed of wood, built upon brick walls, and in its figure represents a

mountain, composed of three principal ascents, which gradually diminish in height, with an intermediate space to represent valleys. There is a floored way from top to bottom, in which three parallel grooves are made. A small carriage, containing one person, being placed upon the centre groove upon the highest point of this mountain, goes with vast swiftness down one hill, its velocity in descending carries it up a second; and thus it is in rapid motion until it arrives at the bottom of the area, when it is placed in one of the grooves, and drawn up by a cord fixed to a windlass. At the top of the mountain are several apartments for the exclusive accommodation of the court and the nobility; other persons, to the amount of some thousands, are admitted within the colonade and upon the roof. A spacious amphitheatre near the Flying Mountain is appropriated for the exhibition of tournaments.

Masquerades are very fashionable amusements among the Russians. At Peterhoff, twenty miles from Petersburg, there is an anniversary festival in the summer. This town is celebrated for its variety of water-works, which combine, with the effects of pyrotechnics, to delight the eye with a delightful scenery, produced as by magic. A number of yachts, floating on the pellucid bosom of a fine canal, are illuminated, while on the shore is an immense pyramid of fire. The Black Sea in the rear has its waves reflecting the brilliancy of thousands of lamps glittering in a fleet laying at anchor.

Amidst these impressive displays of the wonders of nature, combined with the beauties of art, the attention is attracted by the appearance of numerous



masks, habited in a black silk dress, who in mazy circles dance, while, from the adjoining woods, is heard the shrill echo of the heart-inspiring Russian hunting music.

The manner of travelling in Russia in winter is with sledges drawn by horses. The longest and most uncomfortable journeys are thus performed with ease and rapidity. The sledges are made of the bark of the linden tree, which is lined with thick felt. A couch is placed in the sledge for the accommodation of the traveller, who, wrapt up in fur clothing, bids defiance to the severity of the clime. There are other vehicles of conveyance which are not so eligible as the sledge. A modern traveller gives the following description of the inconveniences he sustained in his journey from the defects too often found in those sort of carriages.

“ I was under the necessity (says Karamansin) of frequently changing carriages, and I never had a good *kibitka*. Every thing was a fresh source of vexation. I was convinced that I was every where charged exorbitantly at every stage ; I was obliged to submit to tedious delays, but no where was I more angry than at Narva. I entered that town, wet through ; my bedding and all my things were covered with dirt. With great difficulty I procured two packing matts, to shelter myself as much as possible from the rain : I was obliged, however, to pay for them as much as if they had been leather. I procured, at last, a miserable *kibitka* and horses, but had scarcely proceeded half a werst, before the axle-tree broke, and the *kibitka* came down with me in the mud. My servant Elias, on horseback,

accompanied by the coachman, returned to the town for another axle-tree, while I was compelled to remain exposed to a heavy rain. But this was not all; a police-officer arrived and vented his spleen on me, because my kibitka lay in the middle of the road: 'Put it in your pocket,' cried I to him, with an affected *sang froid*, and wrapped my cloak about me." (*Karamansin's Travels*, vol. i. p. 6.)

Driving at full speed is a favourite recreation with the Russians. In the most spacious streets are frequently seen from two to six sledges abreast, which drive along with inconceivable velocity along plains of frozen ice, covered with snow. Nothing can exceed the dexterity of the drivers, it astonishes every beholder. Amidst the hurry of business, the sledges are seen in all directions in the principal streets, rushing along, yet scarcely ever does any accident occur. Every driver has a badge to distinguish him, which is a plate of tin placed at his back; on this is painted his number, and that part of the city to which he belongs.

When the emperor travels, or any of the royal family, with the design of making a long journey, a machine is made use of large enough to contain every requisite accommodation, such as tables, chairs, beds, &c. The machine, thus furnished, is fixed on a sledge, to which twenty-four horses are harnessed: and, to accelerate the journey during the night, great fires are kindled at certain distances on the road, by the reflection of which every impediment in the way is avoided.

The marriage ceremonies of the lower class of Russians are of a peculiar nature. The management



of the preliminaries is in the hands of the parents, who frequently negotiate a marriage between parties who never previously had seen each other. The intended bride is compelled to submit to a scrutinising examination from a select junta of females. On the day appointed for the nuptial ceremony, the bride is adorned with a garland of wormwood ; and, as soon as the priest has ended the form of marriage, the clerk (who as in England assists on these occasions) throws a handful of hops upon the head of the lady, at the same time expressing his best wishes that she may prove as prolific as them : she is then conducted home.

Prior to the amelioration of Russian barbarism by Peter the Great, married women were treated with every mark of indignity and cruelty, and were in a state of disgraceful vassalage to their husbands ; but they now hold that rank in society which they have a right to possess in every civilized community.

The state of society in Russia has been progressively improving, owing to the intercourse which has subsisted for many years past between Russia and the most polite nations of Europe. Catharine the Second acquired an imperishable name by the indefatigable pains that justly celebrated sovereign took to soften and refine her subjects. The social habits and dispositions of the inhabitants of Petersburg are very accurately described by a sagacious writer, who drew his sources of information from a long residence amongst them.

“ In the metropolis of Russia,” says Storch, “ the day begins with the polite world at different periods.

The bustle in the streets, the business of the common people, is regulated in winter by the break of day. In summer, the fine mornings draw many a lazy citizen from his bed at an early hour, and the smoke is rising from the chimnies; whereas in winter, at the same time, all are still, and buried in profound repose. The tumult of the streets, and the stillness of the houses, are never greater than during these hours.

“Amidst various occupations the hour of noon comes on, and then every aim and every interest is absorbed in the sentiment of feasting and being feasted. The length of the meal is regulated by the number of courses, and the pleasantry of the conversation. It is customary for the dinner guests to depart presently after rising from table, and afterwards a fresh company come in to tea and supper. About midnight, or in families where greater regularity prevails, at ten o'clock, supper is served up, consisting of such a profusion of dishes, as would compensate for having gone without a dinner. The instant that supper is over, the company break up. About this time the carriages are heard rolling through the streets, disturbing the profound silence in which, particularly in the dark evenings of winter, the town has been for some hours buried.

“Such is the diurnal course of life with those who deem themselves of the more polished and superior stations. Many houses are daily open to visits; in others, certain days of the week are allotted to company. In these a select circle of friends and acquaintance meet together, where every guest is welcomed that is introduced by one of the former.



The person who had company at home yesterday goes abroad to-day : one continued vortex of dissipation attracts every one into its eddy that can and is inclined to submit to it. Life passes on in a perpetual intoxication ; from which if a person wake for a moment, it is only to seize the enchanted cup afresh ; and only the person who is content to pass for an oddity, or a man of rigid morals, keeps without the magic circle, and views the general giddiness with pity or surprise.

“ It may be affirmed, that hospitality, the noble virtue of antient times, is not carried to such an unlimited extent in any capital in Europe as here ; an assertion to which the concurrent voices of all travellers, who have staid here a longer or a shorter time, bear testimony. The origin of this beneficent custom is doubtless natural ; but the Petersburghers have emancipated themselves from so many of their native customs, that we may reasonably admit some stronger motive than a reverence for antiquity for their retaining so expensive a national virtue. This motive is not any other than a disposition for society, which generally prevails here ; a characteristic which redounds to the honour of those who possess it, as it is frequently the source of humane sentiments, and generous actions. But it would be requiring too much, that this motive should subsist in all its purity in the great multitude, as in the polite and more refined part of the community. Emptiness of head and heart, unacquaintance with silent mental recreations, thirst for amusement, the pleasure of seeing and being seen, the desire of forming connections, the propensity to play, and many other views of







*A Merchant's Wife.*

various kinds, here, as in other places, impel mankind to associate, because in all places human nature is the same. An affluence generally diffused, imparts general enjoyment. The rich and poor have equal shares: the former guide, the latter receive, and all enjoy.

“The major part of all circles consist of men, as unmarried ladies never visit, and the married company expect visits at home. The mistress of the house is frequently the only lady at a table of ten or twenty persons. The little attentions that men vouchsafe to pay to ladies in other countries are here often neglected; the natural consequence of which is, that the ladies, whenever they are not absolutely sequestered, seek their revenge by an oppressive opposition to the majority. At table they sit close together, and in company they divide off: there are, however, many exceptions to this unsociable custom.

“One peculiar advantage of the circles in this metropolis is the mixture of persons of all ranks and countries, of all religious denominations, and of the most diversified manners, habits, and humours. It is by no means unusual to see generals, chief officers, decorated personages, merchants, scholars, and artists, together in one company, at the same table; or to meet in a company of ten or twelve persons, Russians, Germans, Englishmen, Frenchmen, Spaniards, and Swedes. The first and great benefit arising from this amalgamation is toleration. The reciprocal necessity of bearing, in order to be borne with: the sentiments of propriety, by which those of the stronger party are moved to lay aside their



superiority, that they may not render those of the weaker shy of their company: in short, custom, which familiarises us to the strangest objects, and deprives manners and opinions of all that at first seemed alarming; all these causes together have effected such an harmony in the style of good company, that we should think ourselves in a meeting of intimate acquaintances, where, in fact, they are all people of the greatest difference in national habits and professional notions.

“ It is not in any place more difficult to excite attention by extraordinary occurrences, distant travels, marvellous adventures, and great acquaintances, than here. Most young Russians of rank and education have made the grand tour: many of them are well acquainted with the customs and countries of Paris, Rome, and London, as with those of their own country. A great number of persons, by embassies and deputations, are familiar with remote nations; adventurers, who have tried their fortune in more than one quarter of the world, flock thither, and in considerable numbers: each brings his share of experience into company; the stock of knowledge thus brought into circulation among the more polished circles renders them the more interesting.

“ A people so social and fond of amusement as those of this city, are not apt to let slip any opportunity of feasting and jollity. At these times, likewise, the same ease and freedom prevail, that so agreeably heighten the character of the general manners of the people of this place. No custom is of such universal obligation as not to admit of any exception without impropriety. In not any place

are fewer formalities, nor the neglect of them attended with fewer expostulations and remarks.

"From these remarks and observations, some judgment may be formed concerning the agreeable sojourn this city affords. In fact, of all the capitals in Europe that I have visited, I know not of any where such a variety of enjoyments are to be had at so cheap a rate as in Petersburg."

As an evidence of that characteristic hospitality which so greatly distinguishes the Russian, and which is so admirably described by M. Storch, another philosophic traveller, the Rev. Mr. Coxe, gives the following account of an entertainment given by an individual, upon quitting business, to his former customers.

"In the month of December," says this celebrated English traveller, "I was witness to a very singular entertainment, given to the public by a Russian, who had acquired a large fortune in four years only, by farming and vending spirituous liquors. On surrendering his contract, he gave, as a proof of his gratitude to the lower class of people by whom he had enriched himself, a feast in the garden of the summer palace, which was announced by hand-bills distributed through the city. A large semi-circular table was covered with all kinds of provisions, piled in different shapes, and in the greatest profusion. Large slices of bread and caviare, dried sturgeon, carp, and other fish, were ranged to a great height, in the form of pent-houses and pyramids, and garnished with cray-fish, onions, and pickles. In different parts of the garden were rows of casks, full of spirituous liquors; and still



larger vessels of wines, beer, &c. Among the decorations, was the representation of an immense whale, in pasteboard, covered with cloth, and gold and silver brocade, and filled with bread, dried fish, and other provisions."

This spontaneous act of liberality affords a pleasing trait of the Russian character, and is calculated to remove those unwarrantable prejudices long entertained against a nation at once both generous and brave.

---

## CHAP. II.

### *Government, Jurisprudence, and Religion of the Russian Empire—Literature, &c.*

AN unlimited monarchy is the form of government adopted. The sovereign, whose title is that of "Autocrate," is invested with absolute power; there is no barrier placed to the exercise of his authority: he is the sole arbiter of the happiness and prosperity, or misery of his subjects. The reigning emperor has, ever since his accession to the imperial throne, made the happiness of his people the directory of his conduct. The czar Peter, although he cannot be exonerated altogether from acting in some instances in an arbitrary manner and with capricious despotism,

yet abolished many tyrannical usages practised by his predecessors.

Catherine the Second imitated his example ; and the emperor Alexander has greatly reformed the laws, and put them on a better footing. The work of regeneration, where so many abuses were to be corrected, could not be achieved at once, but in a gradual and progressive manner ; and therefore it cannot be expected, that the system of civil laws, at present, in Russia, should have attained unto, or become altogether perfect. In the legislative code of laws of Russia embraces much penal severity. In the earlier periods, and even when Peter the First exercised the imperial sovereignty, public depredators on the high-way were suspended on gibbets by iron hooks affixed to the ribs : the agonies produced by this lingering and protracted way of annihilating the vital principle may be better conceived than described.

The discipline of the *knout*, but rarely made use of now, is of a very sanguinary nature. From this mode of punishment no rank exempts ; and, in many instances, the tender sex, and females of high distinction, have been compelled to undergo its disgusting severity. In the exercise of the double knout, the hands of the culprit are fastened behind his back, and the cord being to a pulley, lifts him from the ground, which occasions the dislocation of both the shoulders ; the executioner then, with a tremendous leathern thong, flagellates with merciless exertion. As in the military punishments in England, a surgeon is always present to mark the state of the



sufferer; notwithstanding the precautionary measure of medical attendance, the knout has in too many instances proved fatal. Another method of retributive justice is, by boring a hole through, or cutting out the tongue: other punishments are, exiling to Siberia, and a condemnation to working in the mines; in each of these cases, the criminal suffers perhaps more than in that of the knout. The dreadful fatigues and hardships he undergoes renders his existence a burden; and he is destined to suffer a lingering death, either frozen in the wilds of Siberia, or emaciated in the subterraneous caverns of the earth. In some instances felons are branded on the cheeks and forehead. Some recent travellers in Russia inform us, that there were lately from sixteen hundred to two thousand convicts sentenced to work in the mines at Nerzhinsk for life; those who were married were allowed permission to build huts near the mines for themselves and families.

The feudal system, so general in the northern parts of Europe, was exercised in Russia to an enormous extent. The peasantry was in a state of complete vassalage to their landlords; and those who were tenants on the estates of the nobility were viewed as much their property as lands which they tenanted. A creditor had the power to make his debtor and all his family slaves. With respect to courts of judicature, they were abounding with abuses, and under the influence of the most flagrant corruption; but Catharine the Second made the judges independent, by affixing a certain salary to the exercise of their functions. As to the police

of the metropolis, Sir Nathaniel Wraxall, who visited Petersburg about forty years ago, makes the following animadversions.

“ The police of Petersburg is very good, and one may walk with great safety at any hour. Now and then a murder happens, but this is by no means frequent. Some branches of the police appeared to me singular, though I must allow they are productive of salutary consequences. I was a little indisposed soon after my arrival, and sent my servant to purchase some magnesia in the shops : he brought me word, that no apothecary would sell him any ; but that three or four of them had assured him they dared not part with a drachm if a hundred ducats were offered for it, unless a regular prescription was brought them, signed by a physician, as the punishment is very severe for their violating this regulation. Esculapius could not have a law more beneficial to the faculty ; but it prevents empirics from destroying numbers as they do with impunity among us, and renders it very easy to discover poisons, by tracing to its source the vendor of them.

“ Another regulation here, though not without its advantages likewise, is very troublesome. No stranger can quit the capital to pass the frontiers without having been first advertised in all the public papers for ten days preceding his departure, though his business or affairs should be ever so urgent. But as Petersburg is not a thoroughfare, this restraint is less felt than otherwise it would be.”

Since Sir Nathaniel published his travels, the regulations of the police have been altered, and rendered more palatable to strangers.



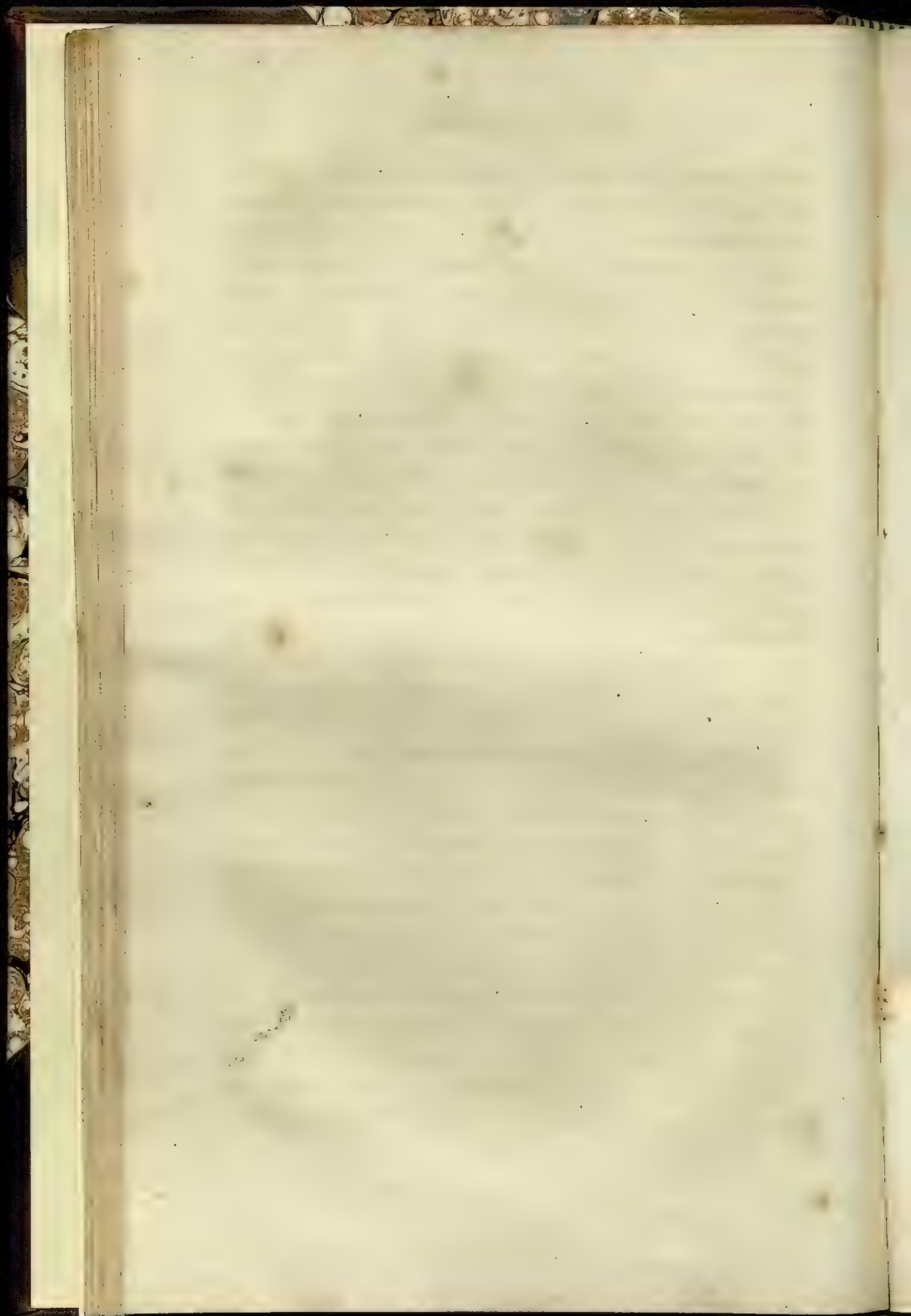
The national religion of Russia is that of the Greek church, which approximates very much to that of the church of Rome, from which it seceded. The grand article in which it is dissentient from popery, is in refusing to acknowledge the supremacy of the Pope. In the Greek church, the worship of images is rejected; the distinguishing article of faith is the doctrine, that the Holy Spirit does not proceed from the Father and the Son, but from the Father only. There is a flagrant inconsistency in the creed of the Russian church—that while it disclaims any adoration of images, it admits of a superstitious veneration for the pictures of saints, to whom prayers are offered up in the capacity of mediators. In the houses of the peasants, there is generally found a figure, called an *obróss*, to which devotional orisons are paid. The Russian kalendar is crowded with saints' days, which are strictly observed: but the grandest festival is that of Easter, which is observed with a degree of splendid solemnity highly impressive. The sublime event of the resurrection of the Divine Founder of the Christian religion is dramatised.

Russia is divided into 36 eparchies or bishoprics, containing 483 cathedrals, and 26,598 churches. The bishops are exclusively compelled to celibacy. Ecclesiastical affairs are under the superintendence of a synod, which is designated "The Holy Synod." The emperor nominates the bishops. The priests have no fixed stipends, but depend on the voluntary contributions of their respective congregations. There are a great number of monasteries in Russia, estimated at least to amount to 387: from the body



An Abbot.





of the monks the superior clergy are chosen. Peter the Third made a very impolitic innovation in the ecclesiastical costume, namely, that of ordering the clergy to have their beards cut off. This circumstance, insignificant as it appears, created such a spirit of dissatisfaction as ultimately to prove fatal to him.

There is a large body of seceders from the established church of Russia, by some writers estimated to amount to two million. One branch of these schismatics introduced a great deal of the Jewish laws and ceremonies into the Christian code. Another body of separatists appeared about the middle of the seventeenth century. The abridged pretext for dissenting was the necessity of amending and correcting the church service. The Separatists chiefly reside in the commercial towns, and in the southern provinces. The mother church has occasionally made use of coercive measures to reclaim the schismatics. In 1764, twenty thousand persons of that description were banished to Siberia. "Of all the Russian sects, the most singular is the Duhoborsti, who, after various persecutions, were allowed by the present emperor to settle in Molosknia Vodi, in the government of Tavria. They have no priests, never enter a church, or use pictures, and reject even baptism and the Lord's supper. They are sober, industrious, and mild; distinguished by mutual affection, hospitality, and beneficence, and take uncommon pains to bring up their children in the principles and practice of religion. Their worship, which is not confined to time or place, consists of singing, praying,



and explaining the scriptures. They have all things in common ; and their only punishment is expulsion from their community. They are fond of fanciful and allegorical interpretations of scripture ; but there is little exceptionable in the articles of their faith."

On the banks of the river Sarpa is a flourishing colony of Moravians, which is denominated Sarepta. The United Brethren first settled at this place in 1765. Many privileges were granted them by the Russian government. The clergy form the most distinguished class of the Russian population ; in the exercise of public worship, some read written homilies, while others deliver sermons appropriate to the doctrines of the gospel, as taught by the Greek church.

The Russians indulge very singular and superstitious notions with regard to the state of departed souls. After the body of the deceased is laid out, a priest is sent for to offer up prayers for his soul ; the body is purified with incense, and it is sprinkled with holy water all the time it remains above ground. When it is removed for interment, the priest produces a ticket, signed by the bishop and another clergyman, as the deceased's passport to heaven. This certificate is placed between his fingers. Upon returning home, the mourners drown their sorrow in potent libations, sacred to the memory of the deceased. Although the Russians are not believers in purgatory, yet the priest recites prayers for a certain period of time over the graves of the deceased ; they vindicate this practice, by asserting that those prayers may

render assistance to departed souls in their journey from this world to the other.

Literature was little cultivated in Russia prior to the reign of Peter the Great, who greatly encouraged science, and his example was followed by his successors. The present emperor has been sedulously attentive in patronising learning and learned men. The Russians have literary establishments, which have tended greatly to diffuse knowledge throughout the empire. In the proceedings of their academies are to be found many valuable papers relative to astronomy, mathematics, and natural philosophy. The emperor Alexander has introduced Bible societies throughout his dominions. The earliest Russian historian was a monk, belonging to a monastery at Kiow in the Ukraine. He died 1115. M. Kracheninnikow, professor of the academy of sciences at St. Petersburg, has compiled a very interesting description of Kamstchatka. Russia has also produced some poets of no ordinary abilities. The empress Catharine the Second was a munificent patron of learning and the fine arts. To raise the lower class of her subjects from a state of profound ignorance, she invited Dr. Brown, author of the "Estimate of the manners and principles of the Times," to superintend the education of the Russian youth; the most liberal terms were offered to that distinguished writer, and every preparation was made for his journey, when he committed a fatal act of suicide. The writings of Rousseau were so well received in Russia, that count Orloff gave the philosopher of Geneva a pressing invitation to reside



in Russia, which in consequence of the severity of the climate, he declined accepting. Works of poetry and history have appeared in the greatest numbers ; but translation is the department in which the Russians seem principally to labour.

Some of the antient classics, and works in different walks of learning, French, English, and German, have been translated into the Russian language. The Academy of Sciences was instituted by Peter the Great. There are two seminaries for the education of the nobility at Petersburg, one for males, the other for females. " Besides schools for general education in all the provinces of the empire, there are for the instruction of the clergy, four academies, thirty-six seminaries, and eighteen schools, with twenty-six thousand scholars. With respect to classical literature, the Greek language is taught, but in a very limited number of schools. Latin is more generally taught. The Russian dialect is an improvement of the Slavonian language ; the letters of the alphabet are thirty-six in number, and they very much resemble the Greek characters. The clergy, in general adopt the modern Greek, which is also made use of by persons of literary talent."

" Nothing serves," says a modern writer, " to give a more correct and exalted idea of the consequence that Russia seems destined to attain among nations than the history and nature of its commerce. Though considerable commerce had been carried on by the nations now incorporated into the Russian empire before the reign of Peter the Great, Russia had no ports, and but trifling intercourse

with foreign nations, while the vast means of internal traffic remained unimproved. That enterprising and indefatigable monarch entered into commercial treaties with the Chinese and Persians, opened a communication between the Baltic and Caspian seas; and by the building of Petersburg, and the acquisition of other ports on the former, established a most profitable connexion between his own dominions and the maritime nations. During the reign of Catharine the Second, the commerce of the Euxine was acquired, inland navigation improved, and a spirit of active and industrious enterprize excited from Riga to the Eastern Ocean.

"As the population of Russia," continues Mr. Anderson, "is by no means equal to the cultivation of the soil, its exports consist chiefly of raw materials, or commodities so far manufactured, as to fit them for transportation. Among the articles may be mentioned, iron, saltpetre, hemp, flax, napkins, linen, sail-cloth, cordage, linseed oil, linseed, tobacco, rhubarb, wheat, rye, barley, oats, masts, planks, boards, rosin, tar, pitch, train-oil, wax, tallow, potashes, isinglass, caviar, horse-hair and tails, hogs' bristles, matts, hides, ox tongues, and bones. In return for these articles, the Russians receive stuffs of silk, woollen and cotton, cloth, stockings, trinkets, watches, hardware, looking-glasses, English stone ware, English horses, coffee, sugar, oranges, lemons, fresh fruit, herrings, wines, brandy, English beer, mineral water, paper, books, engravings, alum, indigo, scythes, and glass ware. The chief seats of Russian commerce are on the Baltic. At Petersburg alone is made the one half



nearly of all the exports and imports of the empire. Riga is also a place of great trade: Archangel, on the White Sea, has lost much of its former consequence, and now is little superior to Astrakhan. Nicholaef, on the Black Sea, the third town in the empire, is advantageously situated, and in a very flourishing condition. The commerce on the Chinese frontier, though liable to interruption, amounts to 2,000,000 of rubles. In 1758, the whole exports of the Russian empire amounted in value to 8,150,683 rubles, in 1768 to 12,971,542, and in 1790 to 27,500,000. For the first of these periods, the imports were valued at 5,826,126 rubles; for the second at 10,856,161; and the last at 22,500,000. In 1799, the exports from Petersburg alone amounted to 38,169,925 rubles, and the imports to 19,290,779. This statement shews a prodigious increase, and a great balance in favour of Russia. One half of the Russian trade is with Great Britain. The ratio of the profit on the trade with the English compared with that in the trade with all other nations, is very remarkable. In 1784, the whole exports amounted to 12,941,513 rubles, and the whole imports to 121,72,345. The British share in the exports were 8,390,755 rubles, and in the imports 3,000,915, leaving a profit to the Russians of 5,189,820 rubles; whereas, with all other nations, they lost 4,620,652 rubles. About a third of the whole trade is carried on by Russian subjects. The business of Petersburg is conducted by factors chiefly foreigners. The Russian merchants from the interior repair to Petersburg at a stated time, and enter into contracts with the factors to deliver goods of

particular descriptions, the following spring or summer, receiving meanwhile the whole or half of the purchase-money. On imported goods, which are sold by the resident factors, or delivered by them for sale at foreign markets, the Russian merchant who orders them, receives, six, twelve, or eighteen months credit."

The annual balance of trade of Russia before the rupture with England was 800,000*l.* in her favour. The Ukraine may be called the granary of the empire; the best corn, hemp, flax, honey, and wax, come from this fertile province, and 10,000 head of horned cattle are annually sent from its pastures into Silesia and Saxony. Russia carries on a most extensive commerce over land to China by means of caravans. This trade chiefly consists in furs, which are exchanged for cotton, silk, tea, &c. "To Bucharra in Tartary, and to the annual fair at Samarcand, Russia sends her own merchandise, in return for Indian silks, curled lamb-skins, and money. She likewise trades to Persia, by way of Astrakan, across the Caspian Sea, for raw and wrought silk. In 1784, an imperial edict was issued, permitting all foreigners to carry on a free trade by sea and land with the several countries bordering on the Euxine. The same privileges, religious and civil, are allowed to them in the ports of Cherson, Sebastopolis, and Theodosia, in the province of Tauvida, as in Petersburg."

The internal trade of Russia is in a very flourishing state. In 1803, there were 843 leather manufactories, 283 linen, 321 silk, 107 glass, and 55 paper.

The armed force of Russia has been greatly aug-



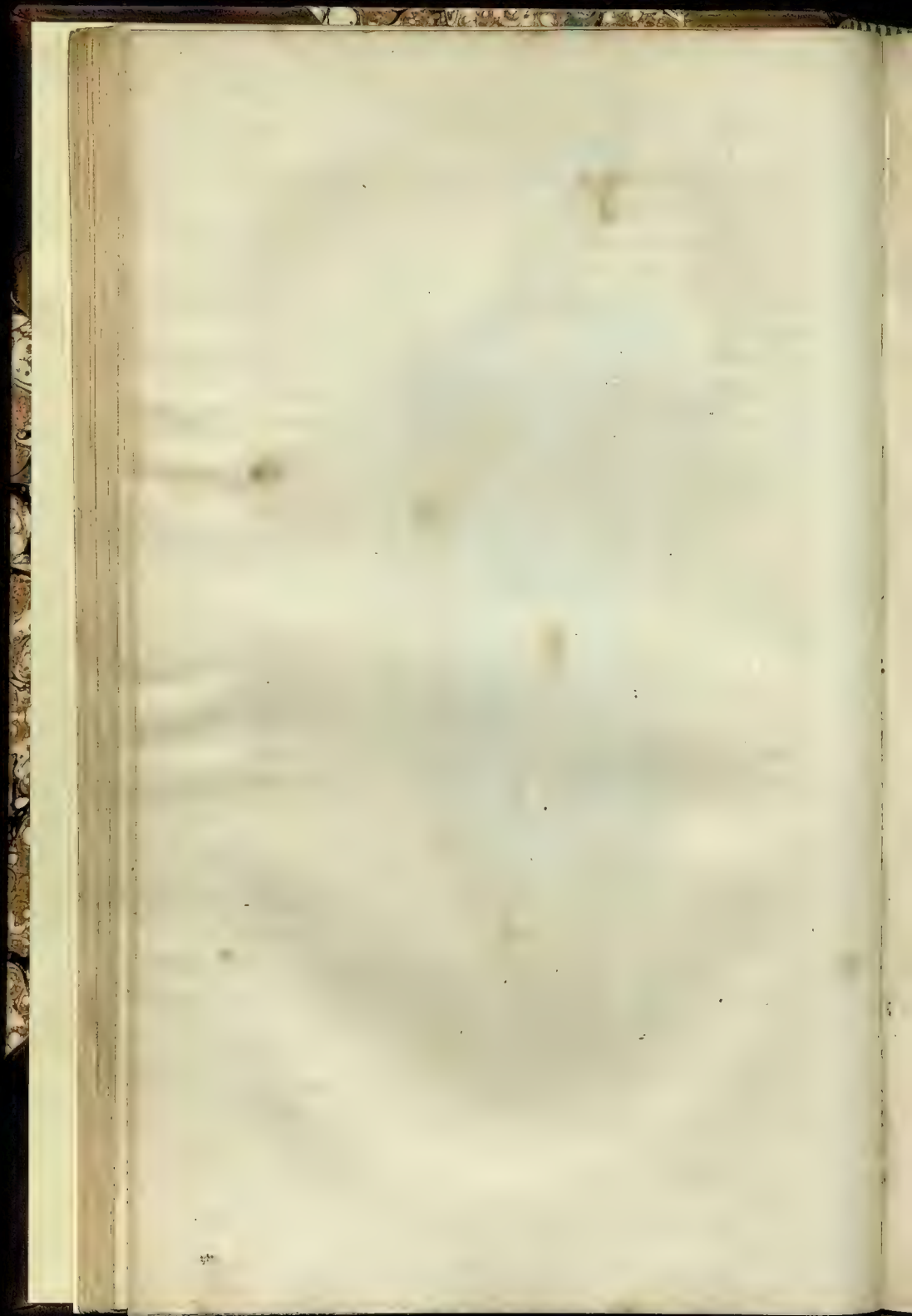
mented of late. Busching, in his Geography, asserts, that in 1772, the Russian army amounted to more than six hundred thousand men; in the course of a few years it was increased considerably, the effective troops do not near amount to the amount nominally stated; the garrisons and provinces of the Empire, draw off a large portion of the troops. In the commencement of the campaign of 1812, which ended so triumphantly for Russia, it was with extreme difficulty, that two hundred thousand effective men were brought into the field. The most formidable body of the Russian army, is the Cossack cavalry. These brave, hardy, and intrepid warriors, are of Slavonic origin, and their principal seat, is on the banks of the river Don. In consequence of military service, they are exempted from all taxes. They are obliged to serve in any part of the world as light horse, mounted, and accoutered at their own expence. They are governed by an Ataman, or a Hetman, whose power was formerly very great, but it has recently been greatly abridged, and the crown has the nomination of each Hetman.

The Don Cossacks are more personable than the Russians, they are in general very fine and well proportioned men. Their costume is a blue jacket, with white dimity waistcoat and trowsers. In their evolutions, they display astonishing rapidity; and with a very long spear, rush upon the enemy with inconceivable fury. The English nation was gratified a few years since with the sight of one of those distinguished warriors, who resided for a short time in the metropolis prior to the arrival of his imperial majesty.



Don Quixote.





There is another division of Cossacks who originally dwelt on the banks of the Dnieper; but in consequence of a revolt during the reign of the empress Catharine the Second, were transported to a distant part beyond the sea of Azof. They differ from their brethren of the Don, in many respects, both in dress and character. The mode of recruiting the Russian army is nearly similar to that practised in England.

The navy of Russia was truly insignificant until the reign of Peter the Great. That illustrious sovereign, for the encouragement of naval architecture in his dominions, after working in the dock-yard at Deptford to make himself master of the science, took with him, on his return to Russia, many ingenious mechanics, well skilled in the art of ship building. At the death of Peter, the navy of Russia consisted of fifty sail of the line; but it was greatly neglected until the accession of Catharine the Second; since which period it has been placed on a very respectable footing. In 1807, the great fleet of the Baltic consisted of 59 ships, carrying 2240 guns, including 20 new ships of the line, with 1588 guns; 14 frigates, with 426 guns; 6 cutters, with 130 guns, and 19 smaller vessels with 116 guns. The fleet stationed on the Black Sea was formed of 37 ships, with 1288 guns, as also 40 gun boats with 54 pieces of cannon; there was also a fleet of gallies having 705 guns. Great improvements have been made in the Russian navy in consequence of the superintendence of English officers. "The expense of building ships, in consequence of negligence, waste, and imposi-



tion," says Mr. Anderson in his "Sketches of the Russian Empire," "is so enormous, that admiral Knowles told the empress Catharine, that he would engage to fetch all the materials for ship-building from Russia, pay the duties upon them, and deliver to her from England ships completely equipped at much less than they cost her in her own dock-yards. Twenty thousand sailors are kept in constant service either on board the ships, or in the dock-yards.

The revenue of Russia has been estimated at twelve million sterling. It arises from various taxes and monopolies. Of the former the chief is a poll tax first imposed by Peter the First. There is also a tax on capital of one per cent, paid by merchants, in consequence of which they are exempted from the poll tax. Duties on exports and imports, on law proceedings, on stamped paper, and on the profits arising from the salt trade, spirituous liquors, &c. form some of the sources of the revenue.

There were no orders of knighthood in Russia before the time of Peter the Great. He instituted three: the order of St. Andrew was founded in 1698, when that monarch was engaged in war with the Othman Porte. Those who belong to this order are persons of the first rank and consequence in the empire. He instituted the order of St. Alexander Newski, confirmed by Catharine the First. The last order he instituted in honour of his empress, after whom it was denominated the order of St. Catharine. Catharine the Second founded the order of St. George, for military officers in her service: she also, in 1782, instituted the order of St. Vlodi-

mir, for persons holding offices of a civil nature. The order of St. Anne of Holstein was founded in memory of Anne, daughter of Peter the Great, by the emperor Peter the Third.

---

### CHAP. III.

#### *Description of the chief Cities and Towns of Russia in Europe.*

THE metropolis of the Russian empire, is the city of St. Petersburg. It is situated at the mouth of the river Neva, on a cluster of islands, which once exhibited nothing but a disgusting morass. The creative genius of Peter the Great converted a miserable into a splendid city. Some idea of its magnificence may be formed from the impressions it made on the mind of a modern traveller of considerable ability.

"I was struck," says Sir N. Wraxall, "with a pleasing astonishment while I wandered among havens, streets, and public buildings, which have arisen as by enchantment within the memory of men still alive, and have converted the marshy islands of the Neva into one of the most magnificent cities of the earth. The imagination, aided by so many visible objects, rises to the wondrous founder, and beholds, in idea, the tutelary genius of Peter yet



hovering over the child of his own production, and viewing with a parent's fondness its rising palaces and temples. The names on which the antient story dwells with so much pleasure, sink on a comparison with this immortal man; and the famous legislators of Greece and Egypt never presumed to attempt the mighty transformation which the Czar completed."

The river Neva, which flows through the city, is in various places as broad, and in some broader than the river Thames at London. Its banks are adorned with a range of splendid buildings. Over this river is a bridge of pontoons. One of the finest ornaments of this great city is an equestrian statue of its ever memorable founder erected by order of the late empress Catharine the Second. It was executed by a native of France, and is a lasting memorial of his talents. It stands on a pedestal of red granite. The base is forty-two feet long, thirty-six at the top, twenty-one thick, and seventeen feet high. All travellers who have visited Petersburg agree in eulogising the beauty of this statue, which is erected before the imperial palace. The spectator is wrapt in admiration at the attitude in which the artist has placed the czar. He is represented as mounted on a rock of prodigious magnitude, to the summit of which his horse is ascending. The following inscription is engraved on this statue: *Petro Primo, Catherina Secunda, Posuit. 1782.*

The houses in Petersburg are built upon piles. The streets are intersected with canals, and trees are planted on each side. It is evident that the emperor borrowed this plan from the observations he had

made when at Amsterdam. The churches are fine domes, elegantly gilt, which produce a very fine effect when the beams of the sun reflect upon them. The cathedral of St. Peter and St. Paul has, however, a different form of architecture; it is ornamented with a magnificent spire of vast altitude. The fortifications of St. Petersburg are considered as of the most impregnable nature. The walls of the fortress are made of brick, which are strengthened by five regular bastions. In the interior are barracks for the military, as also dungeons, in which state prisoners are confined. A small arsenal well supplied with stores, and a mint for the coinage of national money, are in this fortress, adjoining to which is a small hut, which greatly excites the curiosity of the traveller, as being an occasional residence of Peter the First. Among other articles exhibited is a four-oared boat, the workmanship of that emperor. Among the sacred edifices in this city, the cathedral we have adverted to; that dedicated to St. Peter and St. Paul is worthy of particular notice. The internal decorations are of a superior nature: but what renders the cathedral especially interesting is, that the body of Peter the Great is there entombed; but it is a singular circumstance, that over the remains of that mighty monarch, (as well as the bodies of his royal successors, there is neither a "storied urn, or animated bust," no sepulchral monument, to record his praise.

There is a convent at St. Petersburg, in which upwards of four hundred young ladies are educated; but this establishment is of a different nature from those in Roman catholic countries; the former being a



seminary, and no vow of celibacy being required. A very noble building has been erected for the members of the Royal Academy of Sciences, founded by Peter the First. It is enriched with a fine library, and an observatory, and contains an unique assemblage of curiosities; among which are—the horse of Peter the Great stuffed—the head of the beautiful but unfortunate Miss Hamilton, who was beheaded in consequence of an illicit amour—a figure in wax of Peter the Great, supposed to be a striking resemblance—a repeating watch, the size of an egg, on which is a view of the tomb of our Saviour, with the stone at the opening of it, and the soldiers appointed to watch: upon a sudden, by a secret mechanism, the stone is removed, the guards fall to the ground, angels appear, and the women enter the sepulchre. This astonishing piece of mechanical science was constructed by a Russian boor, who being placed apprentice to a shopkeeper at Novogorod, had his attention directed to a wooden clock, fixed opposite to his residence. By continual examination of the principles on which it was constructed, he was enabled to make one exactly corresponding to it; and, thus successful, he improved in his mechanical researches, so as to attain to the climax of ingenuity in making the repeating watch already described.

Mr. Coxe makes mention of a very curious object which is preserved in this academy. It is a large mass of iron, blended with a substance resembling glass, which is, notwithstanding, quite malleable, and capable of being converted by the forge into any form.

“ This mass, (observes Mr. Coxe,) which exhibits the first instance of native iron ever found in a state of perfect malleability, was discovered upon an eminence between the rivulets Oberi and Sisim, which fall into the river Yenisei above the town of Krasnoyarsk. It was a separate mass, seemingly detached by lapse of time from the mountain upon which it rested ; and, what is very remarkable, the chain of mountains among which it was found, do not afford the least traces of any volcano, forge, or antient mine, or in any other part the smallest appearance of native iron. A rich vein of blue magnetic ore excited the attention of the Russian miners, and first led to the discovery of this insulated mass.

“ The mass, in its original state, weighed 1440 English pounds, and was incrustated in most parts with a thick coat of black iron ore. The inside consists of pure malleable iron, divided by irregular cavities, which are filled with a vitrified transparent substance, yellow for the most part, but black in a few places near the surface, and partially blended with ochre.

“ Persons who have never seen any part of this mass, may be disposed to think it must have been the effect of art ; but whoever examines it with attention, must be convinced that it is entirely natural, although they may not be able to account for the mode of its products.

The imperial palace at Petersburg is a spacious brick building, neatly stuccoed white. It is situated on the banks of the Neva. In this palace are two galleries of paintings, of singular excellence, and immense value. The imperial crown which is here



deposited is supposed to be the largest and richest in Europe; it is formed in the shape of a bonnet, and is studded all over with jewels. Amidst the diamonds which glitter on the sceptre, is one presented by prince Orloff to the empress Catharine the Second, valued at five hundred thousand rubles. There is another royal palace at Peterhof, twenty wersts, or miles, from the capital, celebrated for its beautiful gardens, adorned with elegant statues.— Amidst this sylvan scenery, the fashionable world of Petersburg are entertained frequently with masquerades; at one of these Sir N. Wraxall was present, to whom we stand indebted for the following interesting description. At the masquerade “there were few fancy dresses, nor was any character supported. Every person without distinction is admitted upon this occasion; and there were not less than 4,000 or 5,000 persons present. Her majesty was dressed in a blue domino, and played at cards most of the night

“The illuminations in the gardens far surpassed any I ever saw. Two prodigious arcades of fire extended in front of the palace. The canal, which reaches to the gulf of Finland, was illuminated on both sides; and the view terminated by a rock lighted in the inside, which had a beautiful effect. From either side of the canal branched off long arched walks, illuminated; and beyond these, in the woods, were hung festoons of lamps differently coloured. All the *jets d’eaux* played; artificial cascades, where the water tumbled from one declivity to another; and under each of which lights were very artfully disposed, amused and surprised

the spectator at the same time. Besides those, there were summer-houses, pyramids, and temples of flame; and beyond all appeared the imperial yachts on the water, in the same brilliant and dazzling ornaments.

“There is so little obscurity this season of the year, that if the night had not been very opportunely cloudy, the illuminations could not have produced their full effect. This favourable circumstance however, superadded to the black vapour which rose from such a multitude of lamps, and hung over the gardens, caused a degree of gloom, which, under the shelter of the woods, approached nearly to darkness, from eleven till one in the morning; but before three, the envious day-light burst in upon the splendor of the dazzling scene, which required the canopy of night to give it any lustre. The lamps were expiring on each side; the company began to disperse: each moment diminished the magic which had charmed erewhile, and the fugitive enchantment was passed.”

Peter the First was greatly attached to the delightful scenery of the palace at Peterhoff, and he erected a summer-house close adjoining to the gulf of Finland, which he called “Monplaisin,” by which name it is still known. This neat and modest habitation, for a mighty monarch, is formed of brick, with an iron roof: it consists of six rooms, with an entrance hall. The bed-chamber is only decorated with a few representations of that prince in the lowly character in which he appeared, when he worked as a common carpenter at Sardam.

Petersburg is the grand mart of commerce, and



great emporium of trade, which is continually increasing.

Riga, as a city, ranks next in consequence to Petersburg. It is situated close to the mouth of the river Dwina. Its export trade is immense, which chiefly consists in hemp, pitch, tar, tallow, and timber. The branches of the Dwina are widely extensive, and thus tends to accelerate the vast commerce of this city. The fortifications are very strong, so as to enable it to resist the hostile attacks of an enemy. It maintained a siege in two instances; the former in 1605, by Charles the Ninth, king of Sweden, the latter four years after by the same monarch. But the military prowess of the celebrated Gustavus Adolphus overcame all opposition, and it surrendered to him in 1620. The fortifications consist of a castle, a large trench on the land side, and a massy bulwark. There is also at the mouth of the river a very strong fortress, by which no ships can sail without the knowledge and pleasure of the commander of it.

The destruction of the once famous capital of Russia, the city of Moscow, (an ample account of which will appear in that department of our work which will contain the historical annals of the Russian empire) in consequence of the invasion of Napoleon Bonaparte, renders every information as to its former state peculiarly interesting. The city of Moscow, which is now rising like a Phoenix from its ashes, in renovated splendor and glory, is seated in a beautiful and spacious plain. The walls were 20 miles in circumference. It was estimated to contain within its walls two hundred and fifty thousand persons,

and without the ramparts fifty thousand. Its buildings were rather irregular. Several writers, but especially Mr. Coxe, describe it to have had a most delightful appearance, in consequence of the numerous gardens, pleasure grounds, and lawns, with which it abounded. The churches were uncommonly beautiful, amounting to more than a thousand. Some of them had elegant spires, ornamented with gold or silver, and the generality of them were built in the Gothic style of architecture; the interior displayed a profusion of splendid articles, amongst the pictures of saints, adorned with jewels of exquisite brilliancy. The great cathedral had nine towers, which were each of them roofed with copper, richly gilt, and contained a chandelier, which has been stated to have weighed two thousand eight hundred pounds, with forty-eight lights. The imperial palace, denominated the Kremlin, was esteemed one of the finest buildings in the world; nothing could surpass its princely magnificence. It contained within its walls a vast range of different structures; churches, convents, cathedrals, colleges, &c. Some idea may thus be entertained of its great extent. An image of the Virgin Mary, for its costly decorations, has been compared by some writers to the famous house dedicated to the mother of Christ, known throughout Europe as the house of our Lady of Loretto.

An institution, of which there is a similar one at St. Petersburg, for the reception of illegitimate children, formed one of the noble buildings of that antient metropolitan city. Catharine the Second was the founder of this philanthropic institution. It was in



a quadrangular style of building. The regulations of this charity are equally excellent with that establishment in the vicinity of London founded by Captain Corum. Peter the Great erected three colleges in this city for the encouragement of the sciences and polite literature, astronomy, ethics, natural philosophy, mathematics, navigation, and rhetoric, were the subjects ordered to be taught in these establishments. A dispensary for the gratuitous distribution of medicines to the poor, was also formed under the especial direction of that great prince.—To accelerate a communication between the late capital and the present, Peter ordered a canal to be cut, which commences at the latter. About forty wersts from Moscow is a small town named Theytza, in which is a spacious and superb convent, and a handsome church. The monastery is under the direction of an abbot, whose opulence is said to be unbounded. There is also a royal palace in this town.

The city of Novorogod Velika is well populated ; it is the see of an archbishop. The cathedral is dedicated to Saint Sophia. The castle is a place of considerable note, and is strongly fortified. A detestable act of tyranny and cruelty was perpetrated within its walls in 1569 ; Iwan Basilowick, duke of Novorogod, caused a great multitude, not only of private citizens, but of the clergy also, who were thrown from it into the river.

Twere is the chief city of the duchy of that name, which is also the name of the river near which it is situate. It is an episcopal see.

These are the principal cities in European Russia.

There are few towns, excepting that of Theytza, near Moscow, (which we have noticed) that require any particular description.

---

## RUSSIA IN ASIA.

/////////  
CHAP. IV.  
/////////

*Climate—Soil—Produce, of Asiatic Russia.*

THIS immense portion of the habitable globe extends almost the whole length of Asia. It is bounded on the east by the seas of Kamtschatka, on the west by the corresponding frontiers between Asia and Europe, on the north by the Arctic Ocean, and on the south by part of the mountains of Caucasus and the river Cuban.

Asiatic Russia extends from the thirty-seventh degree of longitude east of London, to one hundred and seventy degrees of western longitude. Almost the whole of this country lies north of fifty degrees of latitude. Although Asiatic Russia is of such enormous extent, its population is thought not to exceed three millions. The climate greatly diver-



sified. Towards the north, the severity of the cold is extreme: during the months of December, January, and part of February, the thermometer is often from forty to fifty degrees beyond the freezing point. This inclement weather produces singular effects on the inhabitants: from the beards of the peasants may be seen large portions of ice suspended, while icicles are hanging from their eyelids. "All the parts of the face which are exposed, are very liable to be frozen; though it has often been observed, that the person himself does not know when the freezing begins, but is commonly told of it first by those who meet him, and who call out to him to rub his face with snow, which is the best method of bringing it back to its usual state. In some severe winters, sparrows, though a hardy species of birds, are unable to use their wings; and drivers of carriages are not unfrequently frozen to death. The thermometer has frequently stood at fifty-seven or sixty degrees below the freezing point; and then boiling water thrown up by an hydrostatic engine, in its fall has been formed into ice."

The produce of this extensive department of the Russian empire is of the most prolific nature.—Rhubarb, flax, hemp, rice, and saffron, are to be found in rich abundance.

"The most considerable articles in the economy of an Asiatic Russian farm are wax and honey, by which the peasant is often enriched. His method is to cut down a great number of trees in the forest, and sawing the trunks into several parts, bores each of these, and stops up the hollow at both ends,

leaving only a small hole for the admittance of the bees. The honey is thus secured from the attempts of the bear, who is extravagantly fond of it, and practises various arts to make himself master of the luscious treasure. Of this honey the inhabitants of these northern parts make strong drink, called Métheglin.\* They also extract from rye a spirit which they prefer to brandy. Several parts of this country produce mines of silver, lead, and iron, which bring a revenue to the emperor.

Among the vegetable productions in the neighbourhood of Astracan is the zoophyton, or animal plant, commonly called by the natives, the *lambskin*, from a certain resemblance to the skin of that animal. In many parts of Siberia the soil is unfavourable to agriculture; but in other parts, especially in the southern and western districts, the land is very fertile; in the former European grain prospers, and will flourish abundantly. The flax grows wild, and and hemp is prepared from the nettle."

At Astracan there are some manufactures of eminence, particularly of leather. Shagreen is prepared from the hides of horses or asses, but there is only one particular part of the back which can be applied for that purpose.

The chief commerce of Russia in Asia consists in sables, and other valuable furs, which are eagerly bought up by the Chinese, and in return, nankeen, silk, and tea, are given in exchange.

\* This was also an antient British drink.



## CHAP. V.

*History of KAMTSCHATKA, and the neighbouring Country—Russian expedition to Kamtschatka—Manners and Customs of the Natives, &c.*

KAMTSCHATKA is a country of which little was known until towards the close of the last century. In 1733, an expedition was proposed by the reigning sovereign to reconnoitre the coasts of the Frozen Sea, and those of the Eastern Ocean, in the vicinity of Kamtschatka, to draw charts and maps, and to furnish a description of Siberia, but especially of the former country. The object was designated for the discovery of the local situation of Kamtschatka; the qualities of its soil, and its productions; the manners of its inhabitants; and every circumstance of an interesting nature relative to that country. For this purpose the Academy of Sciences commissioned three of its professors to go on this mission. Mr. Krackeninnikow,\* a young Russian gentleman of good family and promising talents, was attached to this party of discovery; and to his laborious researches we stand indebted for the most accurate and interesting information of a country so well calculated to excite the curiosity of every Eu-

\* M. Krackeninnikow was born at Moscow, 1713. He died 1755.

ropean. The particular sphere of action delegated to him was, as auxiliary assistant to the professor of natural history with respect to plants, animals, and minerals; but he especially directed his attention to the subject of geographical researches. Krackennikow had a scientific associate, named George William Steller.

The inhabitants of Kamtschatka are as savage as the appearance of their country is itself. Some, like the Laplanders, have no fixed habitations; but they wander from one habitation to another, conducting along with them their flocks of rein-deer. Others have their residence on the borders of those rivers which fall into the Eastern Ocean, and that of Pen-gina, or those islands in the vicinity of Cape Lopatka. They feed upon marine animals, fishes, and those herbs which grow on the banks of the rivers. Some of the inhabitants dwell in little cabins, made of the skins of rein-deer; others live in subterraneous caverns.

The natives of this country are divided into three nations, the KAMTSCHATDALES, the KORIACS, and the KOURILES. There have been various conjectures as to the origin of the Kamtschatdale name; some writers have supposed that the word Kamtschatdal is derived from the Koriac word Kontchala. Though we have no certain knowledge of the origin of the word Koriac, yet Mr. Steller very ingeniously conjectures that it is derived from *kora*, which signifies a rein-deer. When the Cossacks first visited this country, they often heard this word mentioned; and perceiving that all their wealth and happiness consisted in their herds of rein-deers, they



were denominated Koriaki, or Nation of Reindeers.

The inhabitants of Kamtschatka have three languages; the Kamtschatdal, the Koriac, and the Kouril. Each language has varied dialects, according to the difference of the idiom. The Kamtschatdales speak very slow; their pronunciation is heavy, and accompanied with singular movements of the body. The Koriacs speak with difficulty, and with a whining tone of voice, as if crying. The Kouriles speak in a very distinct, free, and agreeable manner.

With respect to the origin of the people of Kamtschatka, they are themselves ignorant of it, and have no other proofs of their antiquity than fabulous traditions. They pretend to owe their existence to their god Koutchow, whom they revere as the author and creator of their race. Notwithstanding the manners, the appearance, the customs, the language, the dress, and other circumstances, incline us to believe that this nation emigrated from Mungalia, and not from the Tartars, the Kouriles, or the Japanese. This savage nation never paid any tribute before the country was conquered by Russia; they were independent, without a sovereign, and without laws. The old men, or those distinguished by their valour, had the pre-eminence over others in every ostrog, or habitation. This superiority was only evidenced by their advice being solicited in preference to others. In other respects a perfect equality prevailed among them, no person having authority over another.—The Kamtschatdales are in general below the middle stature, their eyes are small, their hair is black,

their cheeks prominent, flat nose, and tawny complexion. They are very disgusting in their appearance: they never wash their hands or face, and never cut their nails. They eat out of the same vessels as their dogs, without ever cleaning them. Men and women, without distinction, use the same kind of garments, their dress only differing in their under clothing, which consists of trowsers and waistcoat sewed together. The summer dress consists of dressed skins without hair; their winter costume is formed of deer-skins, with the hair on. The household dress of the men is a girdle of leather, with a bag before, and likewise a leathern apron to cover them behind. The girdles are sewed with hair of different colours. When they go fishing in the summer they wear linen shirts, which they purchase of the Russians. Both sexes divide the hair into two queues; the women, whose hair is long, part it into little tresses, which form two queues, which are fastened together at the end. Those men who are bald, wear a kind of peruke of enormous weight. The covering of their feet and legs is made of skins of different sorts; but the buskins, which they use in their finest dress, are made in the following manner. The sole is made of a white seal-skin, the upper part is of fine white leather, the hind quarters of white dog-skin, what goes round the leg is of dressed leather, or dyed seal-skin; the upper parts are richly embroidered. The ordinary clothes of an inhabitant of this country and his family are worth not less than a hundred rubles, equal to twenty-two pounds ten shillings of English money.



The Kamtschatdales live chiefly upon fish, which they prepare in the following manner. They divide the fish into six parts; the sides and tail are hung up to dry; the back, and thinner part of the belly, are prepared apart, and generally dried over the fire; the head is cured by being laid in pits; the ribs, with the remaining flesh, are hung up and dried, and then pounded. The roes of fish form a very favourite dish, called *caviars*, which is prepared in various ways, according to the fancy. They inhabit during the winter a sort of cabin, and in summer a kind of hut called *balagans*. The natives of this country have a singular idea of God, of virtue, and of vice. Their ideas of happiness consist in idleness, and in the gratification of their sensual appetites. Their passions are inflamed and excited by means of songs, dances, and the recital of amorous tales. They affirm, that it is better to be deprived of existence, than not to live at their ease. Suicide was at one time very prevalent among them, but orders were sent from Moscow for putting a stop to so disgraceful a practice. A Kamtschatdale lives free from care, labours only when necessity prompts him, uniformly occupied with the present, without any concern for the future. He covets neither riches, honour, or glory, and consequently is a stranger to avarice, pride, and ambition; all he wishes for is to live in the midst of abundance, to have every enjoyment he can wish for, and to gratify his hatred and revenge; hence have arisen the most sanguinary wars between the natives of Kamtschatka and the neighbouring countries. Those wars owed not their origin to a spirit of

aggrondissement, but for the purpose of repelling aggression ; of recovering provisions which had been purloined, or to revenge the forcible capture of their women, and then they retaliate in a similar way.

The commerce of this nation is very limited, it is absolute necessity that forms the basis of it. They trade with the Koriacs, selling them fox skins, and the skins of white dogs, receiving in exchange habits made of rein-déer skins, or the skins of other animals. This traffic consists also of dogs, canoes, grand vases, and provisions. The commercial intercourse is conducted with every mark of friendship : when a Kamtschatdal wishes for any thing of which his neighbour is in possession, he goes to see him, and candidly tells him the object he is in quest of, which is granted ; and the other in return receives what he is most inclined for.

The Kamtschatdals have no kind of personal salutations amongst them ; their conversation, like their ideas, is very gross. They believe that the world, the firmament, the air, the ocean, the earth, mountains, and woods, are inhabited by spirits, of whom they are afraid, and whom they honour more than their god Koutkhow. To these spirits they offer up sacrifices ; and, far from having any fear of their deity, they curse him whenever any unfavourable occurrence takes place.

Their arithmetical science is very trivial ; they can count to one hundred, but with so much difficulty, that they cannot count three without the assistance of their fingers. Nothing is more laughable, than to observe them count above ten ; for



having counted the fingers of both hands, they clap them together, which signifies ten; then they begin with their toes, and count to twenty; when, being unable to count further, they cry out *matcha*; or, "Where can I find more?"

Their year is composed of ten months, some long, others short; and in their division, they are not guided by the changes of the moon, but by certain events.

### THE KAMTSCHATDAL CALENDAR.

I. <i>Tchougelingatch-rouletch</i>	That is the purification month. Because in the course of it there is a feast for the purification of sins.
II. <i>Koukamlilinatch-rouletch</i>	The month which breaks the hatchets, because of the hardness of the ice.
III. <i>Balatoul</i>	The commencement of hot weather.
IV. <i>Kidich-rounnitch</i>	When the days begin to increase.
V. <i>Kaktan</i>	The month of preparation.
VI. <i>Kouiche</i>	The month of red fishes.
VII. <i>Ajuba</i>	The month of little white fishes.
VIII. <i>Kaiko</i>	The month of Kaik fish.
IX. <i>Kijou</i>	The month of great white fishes.
X. <i>Kikteron</i>	The month of the fall of the leaf.

The year is divided into four seasons: *ougal*, or spring; *adamal*, or summer; *khithkeil*, autumn;

*koedelieu*, winter. But they have no knowledge of the beginning or end of these seasons. The Kamtschatkads do not distinguish days by any particular names; considerable events serve as epochs in the division of time; such as the arrival of the Russians, the first expedition to Kamtschatka, &c. They are absolutely ignorant of writing, and have no hieroglyphics to preserve the memory of events: thus all their knowledge is derived from tradition. As they have no astronomical science, whenever an eclipse happens they are filled with terror; they light fires in their huts, and pray to the planet eclipsed to restore its light. They know but three constellations, Orion, Pleiades, and the Great Bear. They attribute thunder and lightning to evil genii, or to men who they suppose reside in volcanos.

In the exercise of their laws they have no public judges for to decide and determine in disputes. Each man is judge in his own cause upon the law of retaliation. If one man kills another he is put to death himself by the parents of the deceased. Petty thefts are punished by burning the hand of the culprit. For the first offence of that nature, the thief is beaten by the person whom he has robbed; after which he is made to suffer solitary confinement.—There are no disputes in this country relative to landed property, as every inhabitant enjoys the possession of as much land as he wishes for: there is abundance of herbs and animals proper for subsistence.

The Kamtschatdals compute distances not by wersts, or miles, but they measure the distance of one place from another by the number of nights they



are obliged to pass in their route. A peculiar characteristic of these people is the love of imitation. They will mimic with singular adroitness the voice, the gait, the gestures of other persons, as well as the different cries of animals, and the notes of birds. However disgusting may be the manner of living of the inhabitants of this country, however great may be their ignorance, they are notwithstanding persuaded that their existence is more pleasant and agreeable than that of any other persons. It is this principle of self-satisfaction that makes them view with astonishment and contempt the manner of living among the Cossacks and Russians. But they are gradually emerging from a state of barbarism; the Christian religion, which was introduced by the Russians, has had a powerful effect in softening and refining their manners. The empress Elizabeth established in every dwelling-house a *toion*, or chief, whose business it was to decide in all causes, excepting those of life or death. Some of these chiefs have erected houses in the Russian style of building, as also chapels for divine worship. Schools have also been established for the education of the Kamtschatkadal youth.

The habitations of the natives of this far distant country are denominated *ostrogs*, a name given to them by the Russians. They are of a simple construction. The huts of the northern inhabitants of this country contain two idols, called Khantai and Ajouchak: the former is represented like a syren, with a human form from the head to the breast, the rest of the body resembling the tail of a fish. They, every year in the month of purification, make a

similar figure, which they place by the other; and in counting the number of idols, they are enabled to ascertain how many years their huts have been built. The second idol is made with a man's head. It presides over the utensils of the house, and is regarded as a tutelary deity to drive away evil spirits. They every day place food before it to eat, and anoint its head and face. The balagans are dwellings which are resorted to in the summer. These buildings are very convenient for the preservation of their fish: they are made lofty to preserve their food from the ravages of wild beasts, and are ascended by means of ladders, notwithstanding such a precaution, the bears sometimes find means of entering these summer-houses, and make great depredations. All the inhabitants of the ostrogs regard the banks of the river on which they are built as the hereditary domain of their family. They never quit that spot to go to the banks of any other river.

M. Steller was informed by the Kamtschatdals, that one of their gods, whom they name *Kout*, and whom they regard as their common father, resided two years on the banks of every river in their country: that after having had children, he left them in the place of their birth; and from those children are descended all the families on the borders of each river.

Iron is held in high estimation, of which metal these people make knives, hatchets, arrows, and other articles. Of the native ingenuity of this people in some instances, though so ignorant in others, M. Krackeninnikow gives the following instance. "Of



all the works that I have seen of this people, nothing more excited my astonishment than a chain made out of a single tooth of a sea-horse, which was about a foot in length : the first links were larger than the subsequent ones. The Cossacks found it in a hut which had been deserted by its inhabitants. It is surprising that men in a savage state should with a simple instrument of stone make such a chain, which would even pass among us as a curious piece of workmanship."

The canoes of Kamtschatka are made on two different constructions ; the first are similar to our fisherman's boats, the latter have the front and the back of equal height : they are very inconvenient, and in a small gale of wind they would be filled with water in an instant. All the canoes are made with poplar wood ; they are made use of for fishing, and for the conveyance of provisions. Two men are seated in each canoe, one at the top, the other at the back of it ; they row the vessel with oars on the rivers, but they have great difficulty when there is a rapid current to work the vessel ; and sometimes they are forced to rest upon their oars for half a quarter of an hour. The natives of Kamtschatka are employed during the summer in fishing, drying the fish, conveying it to their own habitations, and preparing it both for themselves and their dogs.—The women sometimes accompany their husbands in fishing ; they employ the rest of their time in collecting different herbs, vegetables and roots, or fruits, which are calculated either for nourishment or for the cure of diseases. In autumn, the men are engaged both in fishing and in killing swans, &c.

They also prepare wood for making their sledges. The women attend to household business, and in collecting the roots of a plant which is called *serana*. In winter the men go hunting bears and foxes; the method of hunting the former animal is singularly curious. "There are various modes of attacking it; sometimes they lay snares for it, under a heavy trap, supported in the air by a scaffolding sufficiently high: they place some kind of bait to attract the bear, and which he no sooner smells and perceives, than he eagerly advances to devour, and is instantly crushed by the falling of the trap." Another mode very much adopted in this country, requiring strength, great courage, and great agility in those who make use of it.

"A Kamtschatdale goes out either alone or in company to find a bear. He has no other arms than his gun, a kind of carbine, whose butt end is very small, a lance, or spear, and his knife; his stock of provisions consist of a bundle of fish. Thus equipped, he penetrates into the thickest part of the woods, and wherever the animal is likely to have his haunts. It is commonly in briars, or among rushes on the borders of rivers and lakes, that the hunter posts himself, and waits for the approach of his adversary with patience and intrepidity. If it is necessary, he will remain thus in ambuscade for a whole week together, till the bear makes his appearance. The moment it comes within his reach, he fixes in the ground a forked stick belonging to his gun, by means of which he takes a truer aim, and shoots with more certainty. It is seldom that, with the smallest ball, he does not strike the bear, either in the head or near the shoulder, which is the tenderest



part : but he is obliged to charge again instantly, because the bear, if the first shot has not disabled him, runs at the hunter, who has not always time for a second shot. In that case he has recourse to his lance, with which he quickly arms himself to contend with the beast who attacks him in his turn. His life is in the most imminent danger if he does not give the bear a mortal thrust ; and in such combats it may be supposed that the man is not always the conqueror. But this does not prevent the inhabitants of the country from daily exposing their lives ; the frequent examples of the death of their countrymen has no effect upon them ; indeed they never go out without considering before-hand that it is to conquer or to die ; and this severe alternative neither stops or terrifies them."

M. de Lesseps assures us, that he was informed when a bear triumphs over the aggressor, he tears his skin from his skull, draws it over his face, and then leaves him ; a mode of revenge which indicates, according to the ideas of the Kamtschatdales, that this animal cannot endure the human visage ; and this opinion serves to inspire them with greater heroism in the combat.

In the winter the women are employed in making nets : this is a tedious occupation ; and they are with difficulty able to furnish their husbands with nets sufficient for the summer season. In the spring, when the rivers become navigable, the males are occupied in fishing on the sea coast, particularly for a fish called vachnia, which is found in great quantities in gulfs and bays. Others are employed in catching castors and other marine animals, which

are to be found about cape Lopatka. The females cull herbs and plants, which they are so fond of, as, during the spring season, they generally are eating. They also prepare the skins of dogs, &c. of which they make habits and slippers. This occupation is so exclusively female, that if a man should attempt to interfere, he would be ridiculed and held up to scorn. There are women also who act as physicians, and who also perform the ceremonies of religion. In preparing the skins for clothing, they sew them together with bone needles, and instead of thread, they make use of the fibres of rein-deer, which are made so fine, as completely to answer the purpose. Besides the skins of rein-deer and dogs, which are used for the purposes of clothing, they also make use of the skin of the sea-calf, and even of birds. They are all painted with varied and diversified colours. On their heads the inhabitants of this country wear a kind of bonnet, made of the feathers of birds and the skins of beasts, like to the antient bonnets of the Russian women. The Kamtschatdal females wear a whimsical sort of peruke, which they regard as one of their greatest ornaments of dress: so attached indeed are they to these wigs, that, according to M. Steller, many refused to embrace Christianity, because that, to be baptised, it was requisite they should take them off. Those who had their own hair frizzled into the form of these perukes, were obliged to have their hair cut off if they appeared at the baptismal font. Young women dress their hair in little queues, and they make use of the oil of the sea-calf to give it a glossy appearance. A great change has, however, been effected of late



years, and the wives and daughters of the Kamtschatsdals greatly imitate the dress of the Russian ladies. They also embellish their persons by making use of rouge and white paint, the former of which is extracted from a marine plant pulverised, which, after a certain process, forms a fine vermilion hue. It is chiefly in the winter, for the purpose of receiving visitors, that the gaudiness of female dress is displayed. If perchance they see a stranger, they immediately run away to wash themselves, and put on their cheeks a due quantity of rouge, or else white paint, according to their complexions.

Among the natives of this country, the chief article of nourishment is fish, which serves in the place of bread. Their principal aliment is a fish something like a salmon: they divide this fish into six parts, which are hung up in the air to become dry. The back and belly are prepared in a different manner, and are dried in smoke. Although the manner of cooking fish is highly agreeable to their palates, the odour is extremely disagreeable to the olfactory nerves of a stranger. The dish called caviar is composed of the spawn of fish. They never go out without taking with them some dried caviar. Before the conquest of Kamtschatka by the Russians, the inhabitants were unacquainted with any drink but water, into which sometimes mushrooms were infused; but the Russians introduced "*eau de vie*," to which they are so greatly attached, that some will dispose of every thing to procure it. It is customary to drink a great deal of water after dinner, and upon retiring to rest, they always place a large

jug full of water close by the side of them to drink during the night.

The dogs of Kamtschatka are not different from the European dogs. They are about the middle size, and of different colours, but most commonly white, black, and grey. They are especially used for the sledge, and four are placed in each, two fastened to the sledge, and two going before. The harness of the sledge is made of leather: it passes under the neck, and is joined to the sledge by a strap three feet long, in the manner of a trace. The dogs are fastened together by couples passed through their collars, which are frequently covered with bear-skin by way of ornament. The form of the sledge is like that of an oblong basket, the two extremities of which are elevated in a curve. Its length is about three feet, and its breadth scarcely exceeds one. The body of the sledge is of very thin wood; the sides are of open work, and ornamented with straps of different colours. The seat of the driver is covered with bear-skin, and raised about three feet from the ground, upon four legs, which are fastened to two parallel planks, three or four inches broad. The driver has in his hand a curved stick, which serves him both as a rudder and a whip. Iron rings are suspended at one end of the stick, as well for ornament as for the sake of encouraging the dogs by the noise which they make; the other end is sometimes pointed with iron, to make an easier impression upon the ice.

The most favourable and appropriate period for travelling is in the months of March and April, when the weather is less severe. But there is a



great inconvenience notwithstanding ; for the Kamtschatsdals are with the greatest difficulty excited to render accommodation, either by kindling a fire, or giving refreshment. Wrapped up in their fur pelisses, they cannot be convinced that others feel what they do not : they lay themselves down to sleep with that composure, which evidences the cold does not materially affect them, though it does the traveller. " I have seen," says M. Krackeninnikow, " many of the natives who have passed the night, lying with their backs naked before the fire, who, after a profound sleep, and the fire extinguished, have been covered with icicles."

Although the Kamtschatsdals, before they were conquered by the Russians, were not ambitious of augmenting their power, nor of extending their territories, yet they make war upon each other. They make hostile depredations chiefly for the purpose of carrying off women. They employ men who are taken prisoners in hard work : but the women they either make wives or concubines. They are very little concerned whether the motives on which they enter upon war are just or not. Sometimes these wars are occasioned by the quarrels of children, and frequently in consequence of disputes arising from a due want of respect when visiting each other ; when umbrage is taken on this account, the revenge is dreadful. The ostrog or habitation of the offending person is sure to be destroyed. They are more artful than valourous. In fact, they are so cowardly, that they never dare openly attack the enemy until they are forced by imperious necessity. It is an extraordinary circumstance that suicide is very fre-

quently practised among the Kamtschadals; but it may perhaps be viewed as consistent with that pusillanimity which characterises this nation. It is in the dead of the night when the natives of this country make an attack upon their enemies; thus falling upon them unawares, a handful of men can massacre a vast number without incurring any risk, and without experiencing any resistance. Although in some cases they spare the lives of their prisoners, and condemn them to hard labour, yet those who have been distinguished by their valour they treat with the utmost inhumanity. They burn them alive, cut them to pieces, hang them up by their feet, and then torture them until they are dead. Many Cossacks suffered in this manner, when a rebellion broke out in Kamtschatka. The civil wars that prevailed at that time tended greatly to assist the Cossacks in quelling the revolt. In the skirmishes which took place, the insurgents made use of their mode of stratagem; and more of the Cossacks fell by artifice than by any other means. When they entered any habitation of the Kamtschadals to receive the tribute due to the Russian government, it was very rare that any resistance was made, but they were received as friends, and with the utmost politeness, and they were loaded with presents. But in the night the unsuspecting Cossacks were murdered. Seventy of those Russian soldiers were massacred in this manner. In consequence of this dissimulation so fatal to the Cossacks, the latter were placed upon their guard; and they never were so certain that danger was at hand, as when the Kamtschadals were peculiarly civil and obliging.—



This was a certain signal of perfidy. Another token of alarm was when any of the women left the dwelling in the middle of the night ; this was a sure sign that a massacre would ensue, for the men would never shed the blood of any person in the presence of women. Prior to the revolt of the inhabitants of this country, they went to each others habitations, relating their dreams, that in them they had seen their enemies dead at their feet. When the rebellion broke out, the Kamtschatdals cut the throats of all the Cossacks they met, as well as those of their fellow countrymen who would not join them. When they were apprised that the Russians were marching against them, instead of boldly meeting them in the field of battle, they retired into obscure places, where they erected fortifications for their defence. There, when attacked, they made a brave resistance, and with their arrows making great execution among the enemy. In case the enemy is victorious, they immediately put their wives and daughters to death, and then either throw themselves down some steep precipice, or rush into the midst of the conquering army with arms in their hands, to sell their lives as dear as possible.

In 1740, a young woman of Kamtschatka was taken prisoner by the Russians, being found alone in her habitation, the rebels not having had time to put her to death. All the other females, from the youngest to the most aged, were killed, while the men threw themselves into the sea from a very high mountain.

From the commencement of the conquest of Kamtschatka, there have been only two insurrections. The first was in 1710, the second in 1713 ; both

were of a formidable nature. In the first the insurgents besieged Bolcheretskoi; and, in consequence of their great numbers, they were so confident of success, that they boasted they could crush the Cossacks with their bonnets only, the latter consisting only of seventy men; thirty-five of this small body, however, making a sortie, put the rebels to flight. In endeavouring to get on board their canoes, a great number were drowned. So many Kamtschatsdals were killed in this affair, that the river was covered with dead bodies. When the Russians marched to Awatcha, the natives were equally confident of success, but they were all either killed or taken prisoners. One hundred and twenty Cossacks were engaged with one hundred and fifty of the rebels.

The military weapons of the natives of this country are bows, arrows, lances, and pikes. The bow is made of larix wood, and the string, or cord, is made of the nerves of the whale. The arrows are pointed with bone, or stones. Though the arrows are ill made, yet they are very injurious, being dipped in poison; the person who is wounded seldom survives more than four and twenty hours, for there is no remedy or antidote for the poison. Their lances are furnished with bone: the pikes are armed at four points: they have also coats of mail, or cuirasses.

When marching, this people go singly, and put one foot precisely before the other. M. Steller, who made profound researches respecting the nature of Kamtschatka, respecting the cause of the frequent wars which rage among them, thus remarks:

“ Although there is no head or chieftain in Kamtschatka, and every one lives in independence, yet



there are two passions, revenge and cupidity, which disturb the public repose and tranquillity; these passions destroy and enfeeble them. Women, ambition of governing their neighbour, arm them against each other. To oppose the common enemy, they submit to the direction of the oldest, the most courageous, and the most prudent; in case of a victory being gained, they evidence the most zealous attachment to these temporary chiefs, because, through them, they have attained the desired end, namely, having their power augmented, their revenge gratified, and their property increased by an equal distribution of the spoils taken from the enemy. We find amongst this people evidences that they have some ambitious ideas, and aspire to the dominion over neighbouring nations. The Koriacs were the first who abandoned the banks of the Tigil, and entering Kamtschatka, and penetrating to the east, as far as the great river Bolchaia Reka. The Chantales followed their example, conducted by a chief brave, able, and prudent, named Chandal. As this man had formed the design of extending his power, he laboured to acquire that by moderation of conduct which he could not attain by force of arms, namely, to render all Kamtschatka tributary to him. He formed two settlements, one near the source of the river of Kamtschatka, which he held until the arrival of the Russians, and another at Kronaki, the extent of which reached to cape Lopatka. The people, who inhabited from the river of Goligina to that of Kompanovaia, were detached from the inhabitants of cape Kourile. Though the latter people were less numerous, yet they surpassed the others in

force, valour, and intelligence. They were very successful in their war expeditions, and carried off a great number of women and children.

"Some mountains in the environs of the river Apala yet bear the name of the combats which took place. The inhabitants of cape Lopatka, commonly denominated "Kouriles," are viewed as invincible."

M. Krackeninnikow opposes the opinion of M. Steller, as to the ambition of the natives of Kamtschatka. "When we reflect," says he, "that there is no nation, however savage, but aspires to dominion, or, at least, wishes to gain an ascendancy over others, a disposition even to be found among the beasts; but to possess national ambition, must require more judgment and intelligence than the Kamtschatdals possess. If they make war one upon another, if they take each other prisoners, if they make depredations on their utensils and provisions, we must not conclude that they have conceived any vast plan of ambition. A man such as Chandal is represented, we should have thought, would have formed the grand design of keeping the neighbouring nations in a state of vassalage; but there is no such trait throughout his character: the name even of Chandal appears very doubtful to me; and I do not believe, there was ever such a man as Chandal existed in Kamtschatka."



## CHAP. VI.

*Religion of the natives of Kamtschatka—Magicians  
—Feasts—Ceremonies, &c.*

THE inhabitants of this country regard Koutkow as the god from whom they derive their origin and existence. They have no idea who created the heavenly bodies ; they only assert, that they existed before the earth. They believe that Koutkow created the earth out of his son Simskalin, who was born of his wife Ilkkhoum, in walking with her on the sea. They also believe, that Koutkow, and his sister Khoutligitch, brought the earth from heaven, where he had resided. They suppose that there is a god who resides in the sea, and also that there is a divinity of hell. All these deities are viewed as brothers of Koutkow. This primary object of worship is said, after having created the earth, to have quitted heaven, and established his residence at Kamtschatka, where he had another son, called Figil, and a daughter named Sidouka. They married ; and Koutkow, his wife, and children, made themselves clothing of the leaves of trees, and eat the bark of the poplar ; for at that time no animals had been created, and these gods did not know how to catch fish. One day, all of a sudden, Koutkow left his son and his daughter, and disappeared from

Kamtschatka. Tigil Koutkow had a son named Amleia, and a daughter called Sidoukamchitch. This brother and sister also married. This is the only genealogy they possess of these deities. Tigil, finding his family increase, endeavoured to procure means for their subsistence, and he invented the art of making fishing-nets, his father having already taught him the art of making canoes; he also taught his children how to make habits of skins. He created terrestrial animals, and established a tutelary guardian over them. Tigil is represented as very small in stature, clothed in fur habits, and drawn by birds.

M. Steller represents the Kamtschatdals as idolaters. They have many subordinate deities, who, according to their traditions, have appeared among them, but they have no idea of the power and wisdom of the Supreme Being. With respect to their god Koutkow, they render him no sort of homage; never demand of him any favour, nor speak of him but in derision. They relate of him the most indecent anecdotes, and reproach him for having created too great a number of mountains, precipices, rocks, sand banks, and rapid rivers, which they affirm are the causes of so many storms and tempests with which they are incommoded. Hence, whenever they ascend or descend a mountain, they utter the most dreadful curses and imprecations, which they also do in circumstances of danger and difficulty.

They have one deity, commonly called Doustekthitch; and they have a similar respect for him, as the Athenians had for "The Unknown God."



They erected a pillar or column to his honour in a large plain; they never pass this pillar without offering an oblation of fish, or some other thing, by throwing it at the column. Such is the wretched superstition prevalent, that the Kamtschatdals believe that by these offerings, they will prolong their existence. But it is astonishing to reflect on the impure ideas of these idolaters; they offer to their deities nothing but the very offals, or as M. Steller observes, the vilest parts.

The natives of Kamtschatka suppose that volcanoes, mountains, woods, &c. are inhabited by demons, whom they fear and respect more than their gods. They call the deities of the mountains Kamoul, or little genii. They assert that these evil genii come down from the mountains, and descend into the sea, where they feed upon fish.

The gods of the woods are denominated Ouchak-tchou. They say, that they resemble men. They call the god of the sea Mitg; he is represented under the form of a fish. His empire extends over the sea, and the fishes therein. Many fables are related of their god Bilioukai. They believe that he resides in the clouds; that it is him who causes the stars to shine; and to his agency they attribute thunder, lightning, and rain: they view the rainbow as the border of his garment. The Kamtschatdals, according to M. Steller, believe in a devil, whom they represent as very base and deceitful: they call him Kanna. There is a very high and old oak, which they consider to have been his habitation, and every year they go and shoot arrows against this tree. Toula is regarded as the author of earth-

quakes. All the ideas they entertain of their gods, their demons, or evil genii, are so unconnected, so absurd, and ridiculous, that those who are not acquainted with the gross superstition of this people, would hardly credit such a wild system of mythology to be accredited as sacred truth. Their religion is principally founded on ancient traditions, which they preserve as precious relics, without admitting of any arguments to evidence their fallacy. M. Steller informs us, that he conversed with more than a hundred of the natives of Kamtschatka, and demanded of them, whether, in looking up to heaven, beholding the sun, the moon, the stars, &c. they were not sensible that there was an Omnipotent Being, who created all things, whom we ought to adore and love, for the blessings we receive from him? They unanimously answered in the affirmative, and that such an idea had never before came across their minds; and that they never had entertained for this Supreme Being either fear or love. They conceive that God is not the author either of happiness or misery, but that man is the author of both. They believe that the world is eternal; that the soul is immortal, that they will be re-united to the body, and always subject to all the pains of this life; but that they will live in abundance in another world, and that they will never be exposed to suffer hunger. They suppose that all creatures, even to the minutest, will be raised from the dead, and live upon the earth, which they imagine is *flat*, and above it is heaven, where the inhabitants have winter when we have summer; and summer when we have winter.



With respect to the recompences of another life, they believe, that those who have been poor in this world, will be rich in the other; and, on the other hand, that those who have been rich here, will be poor there; and they admit not of future punishments; for, say they, those who do evil, God punishes in this life.

The Kamtschatdals have very singular notions as to virtue and vice. They regard every thing as lawful which tends to gratify their appetites and passions. Thus murder, adultery, and even the crime against nature, are not viewed as sins, but the most ridiculous puerilities form their calendar of crimes.

Besides those deities which we have enumerated as the objects of veneration among the natives of Kamtschatka, they pay homage to different animals of whom they are afraid. To the whale they address the most flattering harangues, to render that monster of the deep propitious, that he may not overturn their canoes. They call neither bears nor wolves by their proper names, but by that of *sipang*, which signifies misery or woe. M. Krackennikow, from whom we stand indebted for this luminous and interesting account of the religion of the Kamtschatdals, observes: "Such was the state of this nation during my first residence at Kamtschatka; but now nearly all the natives have embraced the Christian faith, through the vigilance of the empress Elizabeth, and her maternal solicitude for the welfare of her subjects. In 1741, the synod sent missionaries to this country, and every thing requisite for the establishment of a church, and for

converting to Christianity so barbarous a nation ; and great numbers were baptised. Schools were formed, and the work of education prospered ; and I have little doubt but the Christian religion will make great progress in this country." (*Krackeninnikow's Histoire du Kamtschatka*, tome i. p. 94. 108 edit. Amsterdam, 1770.)

The Kamtschatsdals have no particular chamans, or magicians ; but the women, especially those which are aged, are regarded as magicians : they are supposed to know how to interpret dreams. In performing their deeds of magic, they do not strike a tambourin, nor are they clothed in a particular dress destined for the purpose, as among their neighbours the Koriacs, and all the idolatrous nations of Siberia. They pronounce, in a low voice, some mystical words over some mild herb, or the saruma. It is in this way they pretend to cure diseases, turn aside misfortunes, and predict what future events are to take place. Their principal method of divining is as follows. Two women are seated in a corner, and incessantly keep muttering in a low tone of voice ; one has her foot fastened with a piece of red cotton. If she appears to raise her foot with ease, it is a favourable omen, and a sign that what is to be undertaken will prove successful ; on the contrary, if she moves her foot heavily, it augurs ill. They also invoke the demons by calling out *gouche, gouche!* and gnashing their teeth. When they pretend to have a vision, they cry out *khai, khai, khai*. In about half an hour the demons disappear, and the magician cries out *ichki* ; that is, " They are gone." The other



female comments upon the mysterious words, and desires the credulous person attentively to mark the appearance, and non-appearance of the magical demons. In some instances these Kamtschatdal fortune-tellers implore Bilioukai, by his thunder and lightning, to give auxiliary aid to their prognostications. If a misfortune occurs to any person, he resorts to these old women, and explains his misfortune.—They then make a divination, after examining into the cause which has produced the calamity; they then prescribe the means to prevent it occurring, and attribute the cause to the neglect of some superstitious practices; and, as a sort of penal suffering, they enforce upon the presumed offender to carry a little idol, or figure, into the woods, and place it under a tree.

These female magicians are especially active at the periods of public festivals, and in the month of purification for sins. They then make use of the most extravagant gestures, and act with uncommon skill all the mummery of their profession.

If a child is born during a tempest or a hurricane, they perform certain ceremonies. They strip themselves naked during the raging of the storm, and holding between their hands a shell taken from the sea-shore, and lifting it up in the air, they address Bilioukai, and other evil spirits, in the following words:—"This shell is made for salt water, and not for fresh—You see I am naked, and trembling for fear."

The Kamtschatdals have so much faith in dreams, that immediately upon waking in the morning, their first business is to relate and recite what their dreams

have been. They have fixed and invariable rules for the interpretation of their dreams; as, for instance, if they dream of vermin, they are assured that the Cossacks will be among them! In addition to magic and necromancy, the Kamtschatsdals profess to be believers in chiromancy. The good or the bad fortune of any individual is at once decided by inspecting the lines which he has in his hand. The secrets of this art they carefully conceal.

The inhabitants of Kamtschatka have one grand festival; and it is at that period they make a purification, or a washing off their sins. This is celebrated in the month of November. M. Steller is of opinion, that it was instituted by their ancestors to return thanks to their god for his benefits conferred upon them. A vast number of puerile ceremonies, as described by M. Krackeninnikow, are performed; and amidst them a prayer is offered up to the god Koutkow in the following terms:—"O Koutkow, we offer up unto thee our annual tribute of homage and praise. We beg thee to be propitious to us; to defend us and preserve us from troubles, misfortunes, and from fires." The Kamtschatsdals, according to M. Steller, have a festival which lasts an entire month, and commences with the new moon, which has always been held in veneration among many nations, and particularly among the Hebrews, they alone observing the command given by God for its observation, while, among other nations, there are but faint traces of solemnising it.

The common feasts among this people are celebrated in consequence of a marriage, or a hunting- or fishing party. These feasts consist in eating with



avidity, dancing, and singing. One of the chief dishes is called *opanga*, and the guests eat of it to a gluttonous excess. They sometimes regale themselves with a species of venomous mushrooms; they dip them into a fermented liquor. The first and the most common symptom of the effect of the poison, is a violent shaking or convulsion throughout the whole frame; this is followed by a raging fever. The patients during this time are delirious; and during the paroxysm, they make the most horrible grimaces; and some, according to the temperament of the constitution, get up and dance, while others are drowned in tears, and make the most terrific howlings; but it is only those who have immoderately eaten of the mushrooms who are thus affected; those, on the contrary, who have sparingly participated, find themselves more lively, more gay, and more bold and intrepid. M. Krackeninnikow relates the following curious anecdotes of the effects of the *muchomore*, or poisonous mushroom.

“A domestic of lieutenant-colonel Merlin, who was then at Kamtschatka, in consequence of eating of this venomous substance, was so infuriated, as to declare that if he strangled his master he should perform a meritorious action; and he would assuredly have carried his idea into effect, if he had not been prevented. A Kamtschatdal with this malady imagined that he saw hell, and a frightful gulph of fire, into which he was about to be plunged; and that an invisible power ordered him to go down on his knees and confess his sins. There were a number of his friends in the room when he made his confession, who were not a little amused at the

recital of the long catalogue of his crimes. My interpreter," says M. K. "having drank of the liquor of this mushroom, became so furious, that he was about to rip open his belly with a knife; and it was with the utmost difficulty that his arms could be secured to prevent the fatal deed."

Whenever a desire of revenge prompts a native of this country to take away the life of his neighbour, he immediately eats inordinately of the mushroom. A moderate quantity is about four, but to produce the delirium, it is requisite to eat at least ten. As the women are sober, they never eat of this dish; all their diversions are limited to dancing and singing. M. Steller gives a succinct account of the Kamtschatdal dances. One he gives the following description of: Ten men and ten women, drest in their best habits, are ranged in a circle, and march slowly, with measured steps, one after the other. They pronounce in turn some words; when half of the dancers pronounce the last words, the other half pronounce the first, as if they were reading by syllables. The words are taken from their amusements of hunting or fishing. The cries which they set up while dancing, are of an unpleasing nature, and they do not cease until they are quite exhausted. He who dances the longest without being weary is held in high esteem; the dances are protracted sometimes for twelve or fifteen hours: every one partakes of the general hilarity; and even old men muster up all their strength, and with energy join the merry circle. This dance is similar to that of the American Indians, as described by Baron de la Hontan.

With regard to their singing, it may be pronounced



as not disagreeable ; but there is neither imagination or invention in the composition of their songs, we find only simple ideas. They lengthen or abridge the words, according as the air requires.

In their amorous songs they express the passion they entertain for their mistresses, their fears, their hopes, and other sentiments with which they are affected. It is chiefly women and girls who compose these songs, they have in general a pretty and agreeable voice. It is evident, that this nation is greatly attached to music, it is therefore astonishing, that they have never invented any other instrument than a kind of flute, which is made of the tube of a plant named angelica, but is miserably constructed.

The following is a song which was composed in honour of M. Merlin, lieutenant-colonel, major Paulutski, and M. Krackeninnikow, student of the academy of St. Petersburg :

“ If I was M. Paulutski, I would always wear a fine white cravat.

“ If I was a student I would describe all the fine young ladies.

“ If I was a student I would describe the fish bouik.

—“ I would describe all the cormorants of the sea.

—“ I would give a description of all the nests of the eagles.

—“ I would describe all the boiling fountains,

—“ I would describe all the mountains.

—“ I would describe all the birds.

—“ I would describe all the fishes of the sea.”

The following is another specimen :—

“ I have lost my wife and my life.—Overwhelmed with grief and sorrow, I will go into the woods, and I will tear off the bark of the trees, and I will eat it. I cast my eyes every where around me to find her who is the subject of my tears and regret.”

The Kamtschatdals take great pleasure in smoking

tobacco, and in reciting pleasant tales. They prefer night to day for their amusements; and they have also buffoons, whose profession is to divert others: but their pleasantries are so obscene, as to excite disgust in strangers.

There is great hospitality prevalent amongst this people. When an entertainment is to be given to his friends, the host puts his habitation into proper order for their reception, and prepares the best viands for his guests, at least a quantity sufficient for ten persons. When the person enters the dwelling to which he has been invited, he strips himself naked, as does the master of the house also. During the entertainment, the latter keeps pouring water from time to time on the stones, which are nearly red with the heat of the fire, to render it supportable. The host makes every effort to force his guests to eat, and to support the heat of the room; while, on the other hand, the latter are equally anxious to eat every thing which is placed before them. If there should be any deviation in this respect, the master of the house is considered as an avaricious and selfish man. He, during the repasts, never sits, or takes any refreshment. When the heat has become excessive, and the guest has eat until he can eat no more, he requests permission to go; but this he cannot do until he has made some presents of dogs or clothing, or, in fine, any thing which the giver of the feast may fancy; he, in return, gives as an equivalent some articles of inferior value. This kind of reciprocal traffic is not viewed as any way derogatory to hospitality, but as a sure mark of friendship, which is highly venerated amongst them.



## CHAP. VI.

*Marriage—Customs—Education—Diseases and Remedies—Funeral Ceremonies, &c.*

WHEN a Kamtschatdal is resolved to marry, and has fixed upon the object of his wishes, he leaves his former habitation, and repairs to the house of his intended bride; there he develops to the parents the attachment he has formed; and, as an evidence of the sincerity of his love, he sets himself to work to exemplify his vigour, activity, and industry. He serves all in the house with greater care and ardour than any hired servant. He then, after a series of services, demands to have intercourse with the object of his affection; and if his services have been duly appreciated, his request is granted; but if otherwise, he is dismissed with a suitable remuneration.

The marriage ceremony is of a disgusting nature, and truly characteristic of a barbarous nation. Prior to consummation, the bride is strongly fortified with various extra articles of dress, to resist the attack her intended husband is to make upon her. If he finds her alone, and not guarded by any woman, he rushes upon her with impetuosity, tears off and snatches away her habiliments, to the end that

he may touch her in an indelicate manner. In this consists the whole of the marriage ceremony. Having thus gained his end, the female relatives and friends, with hideous cries, fall upon the bridegroom, and beat him with their hands, tearing off his hair, and violently scratching his face. This scene sometimes occur while the lover is making the attack; but he does not always succeed, and in some instances he has been so severely handled as not to recover the effects of his wounds for some time. There have been instances when a young Kamtschatdal has been courting for seven years, and instead of a bride, has received nothing but ill usage. Widows are married without any other ceremony but a simple agreement. Matrimonial alliances are only prohibited as approximating to the nearest ties of consanguinity. A father cannot marry his daughter, nor a mother her son, but there are no other limitations. Divorces are procured, without any legal formality. The husband and wife cease to cohabit together, and that constitutes the divorce; and the former is left at liberty to procure a new wife, and the latter a fresh husband.

The system of education of a barbarous nation is a subject of peculiar interest. The natives of Kamtschatka give to their children the names of their deceased ancestors. M. Steller observes, that they shew so much indulgence to their children, that when they are old and infirm, they become the subjects of *their* contempt; they refuse to obey them, and even ridicule in the grossest manner the authors of their being. After a long absence, when the strongest marks of paternal affection is expressed,



they treat their parents with unparalleled indifference and apathy. They never ask any thing of them, but help themselves to whatever they think proper, or to what suits their fancy. If they wish to marry, far from consulting them, they act in this instance, as well as in others, accordant to their own wishes. The Kantschatdals respect the right of primogeniture. The elder branch of a family, after the death of his father, has full possession of every thing; while the others are totally excluded. The property is of a very trifling nature, consisting only of some suits of clothing, a hatchet, a knife, a sledge, some dogs, &c.

The principal diseases of the natives of this country are the scurvy, ulcers, the palsy, cancers, and the jaundice. They believe that all these disorders are inflicted through the agency of evil spirits, who inhabit the woods. To relieve themselves from the pressure of disease, they resort to magical incantations, but they have also recourse to certain herbs or roots. For all scorbutic complaints they make use of a certain herb denominated *mitjakoun*. They also drink a decoction of the herb *brousnitsa* (the *vaccinium* of Linnæus.) The ulcers in this country are of a most formidable and dangerous nature. There are certain remedies which, in some instances, prove efficacious, but the reverse is too frequently the case. The palsy, cancers, and the venereal disease, which is also known in this country, are regarded as incurable diseases. The latter they assert, and we firmly believe with truth, was introduced to them by their conquerors, the Russians. There is also another disorder which they

sall *soujoutche*: it is a gathering under the breast, and if not in due time attended to, proves fatal. The Kamtschatsdals assert that no person can avoid having this disorder than the small pox among us. In all cases of wounds, even those inflicted with arrows, the bark of cedar is successfully applied. In the dysentery the root of chelamain is made use of; and they eat *lac lunæ*, which is found in many parts of Kamtschatka. To any wound inflicted by a dog or a wolf, the leaves of the ulmaria (*ulmaria fructibus hispida*), a decoction of it is also drank, but principally for the cure of bilious disorders and the scurvy. The virtues of the above plant are also found to be greatly efficacious in the tooth ache, the leaves being boiled with fish, and then applied to the tooth affected. In the asthma, a famous herb denominated *segeltche*, is esteemed as affording great relief in that and all diseases of the lungs and pulmonary complaints. Decoctions of the plant *kout-acjou* are used as an antiscorbutic, and to prevent debility. For disorders of the eyes a decoction of the plant called *ziza*, is applied to the affected organs of sight, and not unfrequently with success. They have a remedy for the jaundice, which is viewed as infallible. It is a preparation from the root of the plant denominated *caltha palustris*, or the violet of the woods; it is applied externally as a lotion. Phlebotomy is not unknown amongst them, but they use no lancets. The mode of bleeding is to tear away the skin which is round the part affected with a pair of wooden pincers, then a puncture is made with an instrument of chrystal, and they let as much blood as is considered requisite. The



root of the plant *lioutik* (the ranunculus) is of a poisonous nature, and with it they poison their arrows.

The Kamtschadals, instead of interring the bodies of the dead, give them to their dogs to eat. Some of the inhabitants of the neighbouring countries burn the corpse of the deceased. A whimsical reason is assigned for the former practice, namely, that those who have been devoured by dogs will fare well in another world. The body is thrown out of the ostrog, or house, and with it all the apparel of the person. This is done not supposing that they will be of any use to him in another world, but through fear that if the clothes were suffered to remain, they would cause the death of some others of the family. The nation of the Kouriles are very particular in this respect; they will not, for any consideration, touch an article taken from a dead body. After the funeral, a certain ceremony of purification is performed. Instead of prayers for the dead, they cast the entrails of a fish into the fire, as an oblation for those who have departed this life.

## CHAP. VIII.

*Account of the Nation of the Koriacs.*

THERE are two divisions of this people ; the Rein-deer Koriacs, and the Fixed Koriacs. The former live a wandering life, the latter are stationary in their habitations, which are situated on the coast of the Eastern Ocean. They assume different names, according to the rivers near which they live. The Rein-deer Koriacs wander about with their flocks throughout the whole extent of the country, which is bounded on the east by the ocean, on the west by the sources of the river Penguina, on the north by the river Anadir, and on the south by the rivers Lesnaia, and Kayaga.

The Koriacs differ from each other not only in their manner of living, but also in their persons. The Rein-deer Koriacs are short in stature, and have a meagre appearance: they have black hair, which they frequently cut. Their face is oval; they have a short nose, large mouth, and a black and pointed beard. The Fixed Koriacs are, on the contrary, of middling stature.

The Koriacs differ also greatly in their dispositions and customs: those called the Rein-deer are so extremely jealous, as frequently to kill their wives



on the slightest suspicion. When they are surprised in an act of adultery, the seducer is sure to fall a victim to the fury of the injured party. Sensible of the danger to which they are exposed, the Koriac women endeavour to render their persons as unpleasing as possible; they scarcely ever wash their face or hands; they pay no attention to the arrangement or decoration of their hair, and their dress is dirty and slovenly. If they were to make any other appearance, they would be fearful of being suspected to have a lover. "Wherefore," exclaim the Rein-deer Koriacs, "should our wives dress in fine clothes, unless it is to please other men, since their husbands love them independent of that?" The Fixed Koriacs evidence, on the contrary, the utmost indifference on this point: they regard it as the greatest proof of their attachment to a friend to give him full possession of their wives or daughters! To refuse a favour of this nature, is deemed an outrage so great, that it exposes the person to a deprivation of life, for spurning at such an offer. Such was, unfortunately, the case of some Cossacks who were ignorant of this custom.

The women pay the greatest attention to the embellishment of their persons. They paint with white paint and rouge, and their dress is very gaudy. This division of Koriacs are very gross in their ideas, impetuous, obstinate, revengeful, and cruel, while the Rein-deer Koriacs are vain and presumptuous. They are persuaded there is not a nation in the world that leads so happy a life as they do. They regard all that foreigners say as to other countries as absurd and lying tales. Thus

did they address some Russian merchants who were travelling through their territories: "If the life you lead is so much happier than ours, why have you come such a great distance to see us? It is evident that you have come here to eat the fat flesh of our rein-deer, which you can't find elsewhere. As we have every thing in abundance, we are content with what we possess, and we have no desire to wander from home."

What greatly contributes to render this race of men so independent and intrepid is, that the Fixed Koriacs are in great fear of them, so much, that if only one individual of the Rein-deer nation comes among them, they all run out to meet him, load him with caresses and presents, and patiently submit to any insult he may offer them. There never was known, but in one instance, a Rein-deer Koriac killed by them. The Russian tax-gatherers never go into the houses of the Fixed Koriacs without being attended by some of the Rein-deer nation; without this precaution they would be exposed to the danger of assassination. What is more surprising, the Fixed Koriacs are more strong and robust than the Rein-deers. M. Krackeninnikow assigns two causes for this circumstance. The first, the habits of submission which the poor are taught to exercise towards the rich; and, secondly, that as they receive their clothing from the Rein-deer Koriacs, they are afraid of offending them, lest they should in consequence be exposed to all the rigours of the inclement season.

The Koriacs have many good qualities which are not to be found among the Kamstchatdals. They



are more sincere, and more industrious, and less debauched.

The Rein-deer Koriacs dwell during the winter in places where there is a great quantity of moss for the support of their rein-deers. They make use of snow in lieu of common water. Their manner of living during winter is attended with many inconveniences. Their huts are filled with a thick smoke, occasioned by the green wood which they use for fuel. This smoke very materially affects and injures the eye-sight, so that a person, not accustomed to it, might lose their sight in one day. M. Krackeninnikow asserts that, remaining only five hours in one of these huts, his eyes were greatly injured.

Their *jourtes*, or houses, are constructed in the same manner as those of the Calmucs, but are much smaller: they cover them in the winter with the skins of rein-deers. Their culinary concerns are far from being inviting to a stranger. It must require a very keen appetite to eat of their viands; instead of washing their pots and dishes, they give them to the dogs to lick.

The habitations of the Tchoukchi, a branch of the Koriacs, are very inconvenient on account of the smoke, but they have the advantage of being very warm: they are built in the manner of the Kamtschatdals, but incomparably more spacious, as many families reside in one house; each have their separate apartments, which are covered over with rein-deer skins. A lamp is kept burning day and night; although an opening is made for the smoke to evaporate, yet still the rooms are enveloped with it. The houses are so much heated, that the women go without clothing, the different figures which they paint

on their bodies they regard as much superior to the finest dress.

The food of the Koriacs consists chiefly of the flesh of the rein-deer; and an opulent Koriac has from ten to thirty thousand rein-deer; M. Krackenninikow was informed that one of their chiefs was in possession of a hundred thousand. Notwithstanding the vast number of these animals which constitute their property, they regret even to kill *one* for their own use: they are satisfied with eating the flesh of those which die of disease, or are killed by wild beasts. If a friend should pay them a visit by chance, they unceremoniously assure him, that they have not any thing to regale him with, because unfortunately a rein-deer has not died, or been torn to pieces by the wolves. They will never condescend to kill one of those animals to entertain a guest, unless it is a person for whom they have a high respect and veneration. The flesh of the rein-deer is boiled, then dried and smoked; they make no use of the milk of this animal. The Koriacs eat the flesh of all animals they take in the chase, except that of the fox. Vegetables are only used as an auxiliary dish by the poor; and fish is only the food of the shepherds.

"I was one day," says M. K. "in the ostrog of a Russian, named Bolcheretskoi, when a Koriac chief came in; he was presented for the first time with sugar; he imagined it was salt; but as soon as he had tasted it, he was so delighted with its sweetness, that he requested a little to take home to his wife: but as he was returning home, he could not resist the temptation of eating it all up. When he



arrived at his habitation, he informed her, that the Russians had given him such delicious salt as he had never tasted in his life ; but his wife, having no sample to guide her taste, refused to give credit to his assertions."

During the winter they make use of sledges drawn by rein-deer. They are about six feet in length : they harness two rein-deer to each sledge. The bridles consist of three or four small bones, with sharp points, which are placed on the front of the deer, and serve to retard his course when travelling too swiftly. The driver pulls the bridle with all his strength, and the animal, feeling the pressure of the points, slackens his pace. When the deer goes not quick enough, the driver beats him with a stick about four feet in length, which has a sharp piece of bone affixed to it. They travel much quicker with the rein-deer than with their dogs. Those fine animals will sometimes travel forty leagues a day ; but they are obliged to stop occasionally to bait ; if this was not duly attended to, they would die through fatigue. All the rein-deer pasture together, those employed in the sledge, and those destined for food. When a Koriac wishes to separate the one from the other, he drives the whole flock into one place ; and then he cries out in a loud but particular tone of voice. Instantly the deer separate ; and should any one not range itself in its proper place, it is beaten most unmercifully.

The Fixed Koriacs have also rein-deer, but very inconsiderable in number, and those are used only in long journeys. If a Koriac loses his deer, he becomes poorer, and more miserable than a

Kamtschatdal, having no other resource for subsistence, than to enter into the service of some rich Koriac, in the capacity of a shepherd, for they understand nothing of fishing, and besides it is very difficult for them to procure canoes and nets.

With respect to religion, the Koriacs are as ignorant as the natives of Kamtschatka. In a conversation with a prince or chief of that nation, M. Krackeninnikow affirms, that he could not discover the smallest trace of any idea of a Supreme Deity. They have a great veneration for demons or evil spirits, because they are afraid of them: they believe that they inhabit the rivers and the mountains. The Fixed Koriacs acknowledge for their god the divinity of Kamtschatka.

They have no marked times for sacrifices, but offer them as inclination dictates. The oblation is either a rein-deer or a dog. After killing the animal, they cry out to their deity—"This we present to thee, but give us also something in return." When they are to pass any rivers or mountains which they suppose are the residences of demons, they think of making sacrifices. When attacked with any dangerous malady, they kill a dog. The magicians also offer sacrifices, beating a small sort of tambourin during the ceremony. Some of these soothsayers officiate as priests, and as physicians.

"I saw," says M. Krackeninnikow, "in 1739, in an inferior ostrog, a famous magician, his name was Karimliatcha. He was considered as a man of profound knowledge; and he was not only respected by the people, but also by the Cossacks,



on account of the astonishing things he performed. He pierced his belly with a knife, and drank the blood which flowed from the wound; but he performed this trick in so bungling a manner, that any person must have been infected with the blind superstition of the people, not to perceive it was a gross deception. He began by striking his tambourin; he then made a feint to plunge a knife into his belly, put his hand underneath his pelisse, to press the pretended wound, which he produced covered with blood. I could not help laughing at the imbecile manner in which he juggled the spectators. After he had ended his wonderful performances, he thought to increase our admiration by taking off his dress, and shewing us his belly all stained with blood. He assured us that this blood (which was actually the blood of a sea-calf) was produced by the incision, and that he was enabled to heal the wound by the power of his magic. He told us also, that the devils had often come to his house, appearing under different forms. Sometimes they came out of the sea, at others, out of volcanoes: that there were great devils, and little devils; that some were without hands. Those who came out of the sea appeared to be richer than the rest; and that their dresses were made of the herb chelkounik, which grows on the banks of the rivers; and, finally, he declared, that when they paid him a visit, they tormented him so cruelly, that he was nearly delirious.

When one of these magicians attempt to cure diseases, he acts according to the rules of his art of legerdemain.

The Rein-deer Koriacs have no festivals; but the Fixed celebrate one at the same time as the Kamtschatdals, but in honour of whom, or on what account, they know no more than that people from whom they have borrowed it. They give no other reason for its celebration than that their ancestors did the same. This festival lasts four weeks, during which time they do not leave their habitations, or receive any visits; all labour ceases, and they occupy themselves exclusively in eating and rejoicing, and throwing into the fire a portion of the viands, as an offering to the demons of volcanoes.

In their ideas of civil government, the Koriacs are as gross and as ignorant as in their notions of religion. They do not mark the progress of time by years and months, they only know the four seasons of the year. Summer they call *alaalow*; winter, *lakaliang*; spring, *kitketik*; and autumn, *getigua*. The only constellations with which they are acquainted are, the Great Bear, (which they denominate the Savage Rein-deer) Pleiades, Orion, Jupiter, and the milky way.

Before they were conquered by the Russians, they had not any chief, yet he who had the largest stock of rein-deers, had some sort of authority over others not so rich. Thus they had no idea, till the Russians taught them, what was the nature of an oath of allegiance. The Cossacks, instead of making them swear by the cross, or by the gospel, presented to them a firelock, making them understand, that he who was not faithful to his oath, or who refused to take it, should not escape the bullet which would proceed from it. They adopted this method them-



selves to decide disputes and differences ; for the offending parties were assured that as the gun would kill them if they did not tell the truth, they thought it most expedient to make a confession, rather than expose themselves to the loss of life. In other cases a declaration was made to this effect : “ Yes, truly—I will not say falsely.”

This nation are strangers to politeness, both in their conversation and manners. They use no compliments. When a Koriac pays a visit, after unharnessing his rein-deers, he remains seated on his sledge, and waits the order of the master of the house to enter into it, as if merely to speak to him. It is not, however, the master himself who gives this permission, but his wife, by calling out, *Elka*—“ admit him.” When the visitor enters the house, he is received by the master of it, who is sitting at his ease, and he is ordered to approach ; he is then conducted to the place appointed for him as his seat, and is addressed in these words :—“ Seat yourself.” When they regale their friends, they do every thing to render them pleasant and agreeable, but they do not act as the Kamtschatsdals, make their guests eat more than they wish. Their favourite dish is grease and flesh, interlarded ; and in general all savage nations regard flesh well greased as exquisite meat.

Theft among most barbarous people is not only tolerated, but even eulogised and applauded, provided the robber acts adroitly ; but if he is taken in the act, woe betide him, he is most severely punished. Among the Tchouketchi, a girl cannot marry a man before he has given proofs of his dexterity in

thieving. With respect to murder, it is punished only in certain places, and then the relatives of the deceased seek to revenge his death. Murder is more common amongst this people, as they have no idea of a future state of punishment in another world.

A remarkable trait in the character of the Koriacs is evidenced in their conduct to their children. Although they have an extreme affection for them, yet they accustom them from their earliest age to labour and fatigue: they treat them as slaves, and send them to fetch wood and water. They are made to carry burdens, to have the care of flocks of reindeer, and employ them in labours of a similar nature. Matrimonial alliances are formed between the families of the rich and the rich, the poor and the poor, without any regard to beauty, or mental qualifications. They, in general, take their wives from their own families, as their aunts, cousins, &c. mothers, daughters, and sisters, are excepted. They have the same indecent nuptial ceremony as the Kamtschatsdals. He who wishes to marry, however rich he may be in rein-deers, must labour to obtain his future wife three, and sometimes even five, years at the house of his intended father-in-law. Polygamy is practised among them; they have often two or three wives, who are placed separate from each other, having an establishment of rein-deers, with their shepherds.

Although the Koriacs are ignorant of any of the rules of arithmetic, yet, when inspecting their flocks, they with a glance of the eye can tell, however numerous, whether any one of the flock is missing, and



even the colour of that which strayed. It is but in very few instances, that concubines are to be met with among the Koriac people : they are in general treated with the greatest contempt.

A most unaccountable strange custom is prevalent, namely, that at certain periods, instead of having intercourse with their wives, they dress up some stones, which they place by their side, and caress as if they were animated beings. M. Krackeniunkow saw two of those stones in the house of an inhabitant of Oukinskoi, who appeared to regard them more than either his wife or daughter. One was large, the other small. "To explain," observes the above-mentioned writer, "the cause which had occasioned him to espouse this new wife, he told me, that for ten years he had been attacked with a malady as dangerous as it was extraordinary : that his body was covered for a long time with pustules. That one day, being on the banks of the river Adka, he found the great stone ; that, having taken it up in his hands, he found it breathe as if alive. Terrified at so surprising a phenomenon, he threw the stone into the river ; but his disease afterward increased, so as to confine him during the summer and the succeeding winter. The year following, at a little distance from the place where he had found the former stone, he perceived a great flat stone, with another little stone, which he seized with joy, and carried them home ; and when he had dressed them up, one as his wife, and the other as his daughter, he immediately recovered his health. 'From that time,' added he, 'I have always placed them near me ; and I love my wife of stone more than my true

spouse. I take the little stone always with me, whether walking, or when engaged in hunting.' I know not whether, in fact, this inanimate wife was dearer to him than the living one; but this I know, that in spite of the presents I made him, it was with the greatest difficulty I could persuade him to give me those stones, because he believed on them depended his health and consequent happiness."

The Koriacs adopt the following eccentric mode of giving names to their children. It is aged women who are the chief performers on this occasion. Being assembled, they set up two sticks, in the middle of which is affixed a thread, and suspended to which is a stone, wrapped up in a small piece of skin. They all pronounce, at one and the same time, some words, demanding of the stone what name shall be given to the child. They then repeat the name of the parents; and, believing that the stone is agitated, they give it that name which they presume is most agreeable to it.

Women after their accouchement are ten days confined to the house; but if obliged to change their habitation, they are removed in covered sledges. They suckle until their infants are three years of age, after which time they accustom them to take food. They are ignorant of the use of a cradle; they lay their children upon the ground; and when they travel, they carry them behind their backs.

The Koriacs burn their dead with great ceremony. They clothe the body in rich habits, place it on a sledge, and harness those rein-deer to it, which the deceased was most attached to, who draw it to the



appointed place. The body is laid on a scaffold, surrounded with all the utensils which appertained to him. His lance, his bow, his arrows, his knives, his hatchets, his culinary vessels, &c. They then set fire to the whole; and while the flames are raging, they kill the rein-deer which drew the body, eat the flesh, the fragments of which they throw into the fire. One year after the death of the person, there is a celebration of his death. His relations take two young rein-deer, who have never yet been harnessed, and also a large quantity of horns of these animals, which have been expressly collected together for that purpose during the preceding year. When arrived at the place where the body was burned, they kill the rein-deer, and eat them, and bury the horns in the earth. Upon their return the magician or priest purifies the mourners, gently striking each of them with a rod as they pass by him, muttering certain words at the same time as a charm.

The arms made use of in war by this nation are bows, arrows, and lances, which are pointed either with bones or shells. The Koriac language essentially differs from that of Kamtschatka; it is, according to M. Steller, composed of three dialects: the first, which may be regarded as the fundamental language, is that spoken by the Fixed Koriacs, who reside near the river Pengina, as also the Rein-deer Koriacs. This dialect has a strong and forcible pronunciation. The second is that used by the Olioutores; it is much harsher than the former. The third is that of the Tchouktchi. The pronunciation of this is more easy and soft, and has a sort

of melody in the sound. There is so great a similarity between the three idioms, that each can easily be understood.

---

## CHAP. IX.

*Account of the nation of the Kouriles—The Mongul, Kalmuc, and other Tartar tribes.*

THE inhabitants of this country are of middle stature; they have black hair, round face, but their figure is more pleasing, and they are better proportioned than their neighbours. Their beard is very thick; they cut their hair in the manner of the Japanese. The females cut their hair only in front, to prevent its hanging over the eyes: they also paint their arms with various figures. Both men and women wear great silver ear-rings. Their habits are made of the skins of foxes, castors, and sea birds: They are made in a manner different from the Kamtschatdals, being made open in front. The dresses are not composed of the skin of one animal only, but of several sewed together, skins of different beasts and birds. Not satisfied with this rude clothing, they are very proud of rich manufactured dresses, such as cloth, silk, and cotton, but they are



soon spoiled, in consequence of the little care they take of them. A Kourile arrayed in a fine scarlet habit, will notwithstanding carry on his shoulders a sea-calf, the grease of which is sure to ruin what has cost him a large sum. The manner in which the garments are made, or the colours of them, are subjects of little consideration. M. Steller was present when a Kourile, having seen a silk corset, was so much pleased with it, that he put it on, and strutted about in it, to the no small amusement of some Cossacks, who laughed immoderately at him. He, no doubt, thought that, among other people, that the habits of men and women were the same as among them. Their jourtes, or houses, are like the Kamtschatdals. They feed chiefly upon marine animals, but not upon fish.

Like the other nations of this country, they have no knowledge of a Supreme Being: but they have in their houses, wooden idols, finely carved and ornamented. They greatly venerate them; but it is not ascertained whether they view them as evil spirits or as gods. They offer up the first beasts taken in hunting as sacrifices; they eat the flesh, and throw the skins to their idols. When their houses become ruinous and delapidated, so as to oblige them to abandon them, they leave their idols and the skins they have offered them behind. When they go on the water, the idols are taken with them; and in case of a tempest, they are thrown into the water to appease the fury of the waves.

The principal occupation of the Kourile men is in catching marine beasts, such as the sea-calf, &c.

The women, like those of Kamtschatka, are employed in culling herbs, and they also accompany their husbands to the chace. As to manners and customs, the Kouriles are infinitely more polished and civilised than their neighbours. They are mild, sincere, and honest; they manifest a great respect for old age, and pay a meritorious attention to filial duty.

It is a beautiful spectacle to witness the meeting of two friends, who reside at distant parts from each other. The visitor arrives in his canoe, and is met by his friend with great ceremony. Each are dressed in their warlike habiliments, and are armed with a sabre and lance, and bow and arrow. They advance, drawing the bow as if they were preparing for combat; they then approach each other dancing: joining hands they fondly embrace, and give unequivocal reciprocal proofs of affection. Their caresses are intermingled with tears of joy. The friend is then conducted home, where, being seated, he is entertained in the most hospitable manner; and, while the best dishes are set before him, the conversation turns on the adventures which have befallen each other since they last met. They relate even the most trivial circumstances of their hunting excursions; the manner in which they have lived; their voyages; what they have seen; the good or bad fortune which has attended them; the diseases with which they have been afflicted; who of their acquaintances are dead, and what occasioned their death. Thus they converse for more than three hours; at the close of which the oldest person in company commences a history of his life,



and of whatever has happened to that moment.—The whole concludes with eating, dancing, singing, and reciting pleasant tales.

Their customs in courting, marriage, and mode of education, are the same as those of the Kamtschatsdals. They have two or three wives, whom, like the Mahometan Tartars, they see only of a night. Concubinage is also allowed. If any person is surprised in an adulterous intercourse, the offender and the offended fight a sort of duel with sticks. The injured husband challenges the seducer, and they both strip naked. This combat is sometimes attended with the loss of life. To decline accepting the challenge, exposes them to the same ignominy as in the case of those duels in Europe, where swords or pistols are made use of. If the seducer refuses to fight, he is obliged to pay to the party aggrieved whatever he may exact, either in beasts, habits, provisions, or any other articles.

The effects of accouchement of the Kourile women is more protracted than the Kamtschatdals, the former being confined three months. Women give names to the children, which are sometimes appropriated to events; as, for instance, "Zakoutch," a female name—"The child that weeps, because it was born when its country was conquered;" alluding to the conquest of the Russians."

The Kouriles bury their dead in winter in the snow, but in summer in the earth. Suicide is common among them; but no instance has ever occurred of any one voluntarily dying with hunger.

We now turn our attention to the numerous

Tartar tribes, under the government of the Russian empire.

### *THE MONGULS.*

THIS people are rather of a diminutive form, with flat faces, small eyes, thick lips, and a beard very scantily supplied. Their complexion is brown, but the females exhibit a mixture of white and red. The qualifications of the Monguls are comparatively of a pleasing nature. Their understanding is keen and penetrating; and in their disposition they are beneficent, enterprising, tractable, and hospitable. The women are eminent for their industry; their employment consists in tanning leather, digging up vegetables for food, preparing provisions for the winter, &c. That of the men is confined to hunting of every description. The property of each individual consists of his herds of horses, camels, oxen, and flocks of sheep and goats. All their tents or habitations have a fire-place in the centre. Those of the opulent and of the chiefs are richly ornamented, being hung with silk, and the floor covered with Persian carpets. The Mongul dress consists of a flat yellow bonnet, as a covering for the head, which is shaved, with the exception of one lock. The females having long hair, plait it in tresses. The outer dress of the men is a cloth garment, with wide sleeves, a vest of light stuff with narrow sleeves, a girdle, which supports a sabre and other articles, wide trowsers, a bandage of linen, wrapped round the feet, over which are black or yellow leather buskins. The women are distinguished by a gown



without sleeves. Their food is animal and vegetable, and their only drink water. In case of a deficiency of pasturage, the whole of the Mongul tribes strike their tents, proceeding in a direction analogous to the season of the year, in the summer to the north, in the winter to the south. The march is conducted with the greatest order and regularity. The cattle are driven on before; then follow men, women, and children, while the rear is brought up by a long train of sprightly high spirited girls, who relieve the fatigues of the march by singing many a merry roundelay, and dancing according to the simplicity of nature.

The amusements of this people are greatly varied. Sometimes it is horse-racing, at others archery, and other pastimes usual to a wandering race, such as wrestling, dancing, &c. Singing of course is a favourite amusement; and the native melody of the young females is greatly heightened by the sweet sounds of the lute or the viol. The songs are nearly the same as in all countries—breathing strains of love, exciting merriment by comic verse, or unfolding to the ear some wondrous legendary tale of deeds of glory performed by their ancestors. It is a singular circumstance, avowed by some authors of veracity, that chess is a favourite game with the Mongul Tartars.

Their marriage ceremonies have nothing peculiar: they are celebrated when the parties are young, and the bride brings a dowry to her husband either in cattle or sheep. Their ideas of religion are more enlightened than some of the other tribes; and they have schoolmasters for the education of their youth.

The bodies of their princes and chief priests are burnt with great solemnity ; the tombs are sometimes walled round, and decorated according to the rude taste of the people.

### THE KALMUCS

HAVE three orders of men among them : the nobles, who in their language they denominate white bones ; the common people, who are called black bones ; and the clergy. The huts of this tribe are made of brown felt, and have an unpleasing appearance. The habitation of the chieftain, or prince, is distinguished from the rest by its superior magnitude and variation of colour. The government of the Kalmucs is vested in a *taidsha*, or chief prince, whose power consists in the wealth and population of his subjects. There is a division of the people into classes, designated *Imaks*, over whom a nobleman presides. The tribute to the prince consists of a tenth part of the cattle, or other property. Every man is a soldier ; and upon the summons of his sovereign, is obliged to appear before him with his military accoutrements and well mounted, to be inspected ; if any infirmity is discovered, he is exempted and dismissed. The weapons employed in the field of battle are bows, lances, sabres, and sometimes fire-arms, a kind of armour is also worn. The religion of the Kalmucs is interwoven with great superstition. They have both temples and priests.

“ A traveller, having observed small wooden windmill wings fixed at the entrance of the huts, enquired for what purpose they were put there, and



was told that they were *praying machines*! on which the owner of the hut causes certain prayers to be written by the priests, that they may be turned round by the wind, and he thereby be freed from the trouble of repeating them himself. The priests have likewise a very commodious method of expediting their prayers: when they have a number of petitions to offer up for the people, they, for this purpose, make use of a cylindrical wooden box, into which they throw their written prayers; and having placed it perpendicularly on a stick; they sit down beside it, pull it backwards and forwards with a string, gravely smoking their pipes while performing the ceremony, for according to their doctrine, to render prayer efficacious, it is only necessary that it be put in motion; and it is a matter of indifference, whether this be done by means of the lips, of a windmill, or of a cylindrical box."

#### THE BARSCHKIRES,

ANOTHER tribe of Tartars. Although they live a roving and wandering life, yet, during winter, have fixed habitations, which, in imitation of their conquerors, are constructed something in the Russian style. In summer they retire to cottages, made of felt. The dress of these people, with respect to the men, is a cloth shirt, and a long red cloth gown encircled with fur. This is fastened to the body by a girdle, in which a scymetar is placed. During the winter, pelisses of horse-skin and sheep-skin are worn. The women wear a gown of fine cloth or silk, which is buttoned before, and secured by a

girdle. To distinguish the married from the single women, the former wear a bandeau on their forehead. This race of Tartars are accounted the most negligent and slovenly, as to their appearance, of any of the Tartar tribes. Their character is described as being hospitable, sprightly, and brave. They have an invincible attachment to horses; and there is not a more sure way for a lover to gain the heart of his mistress than to present her with a fine horse.

The favourite drink of the Barschkires is a mixture of sour milk and mead; at all their festive meetings they drink potent libations of it. Their amusements are horse races, singing, dancing, and wrestling. The religion of this people is borrowed from the Koran of Mahomet, but greatly corrupted, and much of the dregs of paganism intermixed with it. Their sorcerers and magicians pretend to hold communication with the devil; they can raise him at pleasure, enter into converse with him, and in certain cases, if he offends them, they will challenge him to fight. These artful men, who thus play upon the credulity of the people, are consulted as physicians, or in case of any loss sustained. Ever since they have been subject to Russia, they have ceased to be governed by a khan, or king, but each tribe is under the management of two men advanced in years, who act as governors. These Tartars, when drawn out for battle, form an excellent body of cavalry. They are armed with bow and arrows and a lance, and are equipped with helmets and body armour. As toxopholites, they are wonderfully adroit. To every troop of one



hundred horse, there is a standard of different colours.

### *THE BRATSKI*

IN many respects resemble other bodies of Tartars, in others they vary. Polygamy is allowed among them, and the number of wives is unlimited. The portion of the bride is in cattle. The nuptial gift of some young women of opulence amounts to one hundred horses, twenty camels, fifty horned cattle, two hundred sheep, and thirty goats. On the day when the portion is delivered, the marriage ceremony takes place. The rejoicings on this occasion are continued for three days successively. Upon the death of a husband who has left behind him several wives, if he has had children by each, the oldest becomes mistress of the house, or if only one has borne him children, she takes the priority, while the rest return home, mounted on fine horses presented to them by their late husband.

### *THE CZUWACHIANS*

ARE principally worthy of notice as to their religious notions. They believe there is but one God, to whom they give the name of Tor; but like the Persians, they pay adoration to the sun. Worship is not paid to their Deity in temples, but in the open air; there sacrifices are offered, which consist of black lambs. The priests are invested with very great authority; they officiate as judges, as

counsellors, as physicians, and superintend the education of youth.

### *THE INGRIANS*

ARE a tribe of Tartars who have peculiar ceremonies at the interment of their dead. After the body has been placed in the ground, and a certain form made use of by the priest, the relatives of the deceased, visit the grave in the night, dig up the sod, and place provisions by the side of the corpse; it may naturally be supposed that they are soon consumed by dogs or other animals. The reason which they give for this strange custom is, that those who have died in this, continue to live in the subterranean world, and that the grave is merely a new place of habitation; hence, besides victuals, they deposit money with their dead. They celebrate the feast of St. John under a certain tree at night, when they burn a white cock, while they sing and dance round the fire.

### *THE JAKUTHIANS*

HAVE long hair, and are habited in short garments. Their food is of three kinds; the flesh of animals, wild fowl, and vegetables. Their huts enclose both themselves, families, and cattle. They are much given to idolatry; but their idols are of the most contemptible nature, being mere bundles of rags. They bury their dead in the earth.



*THE MORDWANS*

ARE notorious for the love of dress, which characterises their women, who are immoderately fond of having bells, pieces of coral, &c. about their persons. These are placed on their caps and on their girdles, and from their number and weight, they are not a little cumbersome. This people are much superior in their religious sentiments to other tribes. They have no idols, and pay homage and offer up prayers to the Supreme Being only.—The Mordwans pay great attention to agriculture.

*THE OSTIAKS*

ARE a Tartar tribe, entirely the reverse of the preceding. They are pre-eminently filthy, dastardly in their disposition, very ignorant, and extravagantly superstitious : but with all these unpleasing qualities they possess some virtues. They are hospitable, industrious, faithful to their engagements, and have an abhorrence for theft. Both sexes wear a habit made of the skin of the rein-deer. The men are employed in hunting the bear, the women in fishing and domestic affairs. They are altogether heathens, and are totally ignorant of the Great Supreme. Their priests are complete jugglers, and pretend to have dominion over the elements, to have a perfect knowledge of future events, and, like the priests of the church of Rome, they absolve every kind of sin and species of iniquity. The Ostiaks believe,

that the bear which they kill in hunting will enjoy happiness in a future state : they sing songs over the dead carcase of that animal, imploring its forgiveness for putting it to death, and then hang up the skin, to which they pay every mark of respect.

### *THE THELEUTI*

RESEMBLE the other Tartars as to their customs and mode of living, but their theology is of a singular kind ; in some instances it approximates to Mahometanism. They believe in one God, to whom at the hour of sun-rise, they address every morning this short but truly emphatic prayer ; " Do not, O God, strike me dead." They, like Mussulmen, also abstain from pork, but they will drink brandy to excess whenever they can procure it. Once at least in the course of a year, they make a sacrifice of a horse, whose flesh they eat, stuff the skin, which, with the head, is placed toward the east, where it remains as a standing oblation to the Deity. The dead are sometimes interred in the ground, and sometimes burnt. This people are immoderately fond of tobacco.

### *THE TSHULIMZIANS,*

LIKE the preceding tribe, differ only in religious opinions. They are neither Pagans or Mahometans, but profess the tenets of the Russian or Greek church, into which faith they are baptised, but they intermingle a deal of vain superstitions with their creed. Their ideas of Christianity are centered in



outward forms, such as carrying the cross, making the sign of it, abstaining from eating the flesh of horses and squirrels, in regularly resorting to church, and in most rigidly observing the fasts of the Greek church.

### THE TUNGUSIANS,

ANOTHER tribe of Tartars, possess some virtues which do honour to humanity. Their disposition is frank and open, undisguised, and without deceit; patient in enduring hardships, content with what providence has allotted them, they carry on their occupations with an astonishing degree of industry, alacrity, and pleasure. In their professional exertions they eminently excel in archery. Their food is simple, and their dress like the rest of the Tartars. Presuming, like other barbarous nations, that the body when painted has peculiar charms, they freely indulge in the Asiatic custom of painting various figures of animals, trees, &c. on it. The Tungusian females are alone distinguished from the other sex by the display of necklaces and other ornaments. They are pre-eminently distinguished for their beauty. Superstition is prevalent in the highest degree among them. Their deity, whom they designate as the god of gods, is called "Boa:" they believe, that he dwells above the clouds, and that he presides over subordinate divinities. He is described as omniscient, and supremely benevolent. With a degree of reverence worthy a better creed, they never attempt to make a *visible* representation of that Being whom they conceive to be *invisible*.

There are priests who act as intercessors, and mediators with this deity, and who perform all those religious rites decreed to him.

### *THE WOGULIANS.*

IN their ideas of religion, adopt an enlightened system. They firmly believe in one great Supreme Being, to whom alone homage is to be paid, the resurrection of the body, and its consequent re-union with the soul ; a future state of rewards and punishments are also fundamental articles of their faith. So essentially do they differ from the generality of the Russian Tartars, that they discard the idea of an evil being, or devil. Their religious ceremonies are of a plain and simple kind. Annually each head of a family throughout the whole community meet to offer up sacrifices to the God they adore. Those oblations consists of the heads and skins of animals, which are suspended upon trees, the flesh constitutes at the same time a fine regale.

### *SAMOIEDA.*

TOWARDS the northern extremity of Russia is Samoieda, a country inhabited by a people very much approximating in their manners and customs to the Laplanders. The dress of the Samoiedese consist in a coat of skin reaching down to the knees, fastened by a girdle to the waist ; the residue of the clothing is of a similar kind : shoes, stockings, and trowsers, are of the same materials. As a covering for the whole, the skin of a black bear



is thrown over the shoulders. In such a frozen region, skaiting is indispensable, and the natives of this country adopt a sort of skait about two feet in length, with which they bound along the ice with astonishing rapidity. The females are sedulously industrious; they undergo and sustain an immensity of fatigue. They attend their husbands in the chace, fulfil all the domestic duties, and are rigidly virtuous. The only circumstance of notoriety in their dress, is a single lock of hair twisted, which hangs down to their shoulders, affixed to which at the extremity is a knot, composed of a long slip of bark, reaching to the heels. The grossest idolatry envelops the Samoiedese: they are so stupidly ignorant as to offer worship even to the heads of bears, an unheard-of absurdity even among the barbarous tribes of Tartars. The priests act in various juggling capacities, and pretend to foretel future events, and act in every respect as magicians. The mode of living of this people is like that of other erratic nations, dwelling occasionally in tents, and then abandoning them for subterraneous caverns—those are their winter habitations. They have a very singular custom relative to the naming of their children; which is, that the child is called after the first beast which they meet with upon its birth. With respect to the marriage contract, it consists merely of a verbal agreement; a specification of the mutual desires of each party to make themselves happy.

The chief towns of Asiatic Russia are Astracan, seated at the mouth of the Volga; it is a place of considerable trade. The Russian exports are from thence sent to Persia, across the Caspian Sea.—

Tobolsk and Kurgan are considerable towns in Siberia; timber is used in the streets of Tobolsk instead of stones. It has a very spacious market-place, where, besides every requisite sort of provisions, there is fish in abundance. The celebrated German dramatic writer Kotzebue was banished to a place near Kurgan in Siberia. From that author we extract the following animated description of the manners of the inhabitants of Kurgan.

"The assessor," says M. Kotzebue, "celebrated the festival of his patron saint, which, in Russia, is a more important festival than a birth-day; he came to me early in the morning, and invited me to his house, where, he said, I should meet all the principal people of the place. I went; and on my arrival, was stunned by the noise of five men, whom they call singers. These men, turning their backs on the company, apply their right hands to their mouths, to improve the sound of their voices, and make as loud a noise as possible in one corner of the room. This was the salutation given to every guest on his entering the house. An immense table groaned under the weight of twenty dishes; but I could see neither plates nor chairs for the accommodation of the company. The whole had the appearance of a breakfast. The principal dishes were of different kinds of fish, it being the season of Lent. The master of the house carried a huge brandy bottle in his hand, eager to serve his guests, who frequently drank to his health without any signs of intoxication. There was no wine, but instead of it our host presented us with mead, which is a great rarity, as there are no bees in Siberia. The guests,



when they were satisfied, took their hats, and went away. I felt it necessary to follow their example. 'Is the entertainment over?' said I to the governor, who stood near me. 'No,' he replied; 'the company are going home to take their naps; and at five o'clock, they will be here again.' I returned at the appointed hour: the scene was then changed. Instead of fish and brandy, the table was covered with cakes, raisins, almonds, Chinese sweetmeats, and a dry conserve of apples, cut into slices. The mistress of the house, a young and charming woman, now made her appearance, and with her the ladies and daughters of the guests. Tea, French brandy, and punch, were handed round to the company. Card tables were set, and the guests played as long as the brandy allowed them to distinguish the colour of the cards. At supper-time every person retired, and the entertainment finished."

Thus we have endeavoured to delineate the temper, the disposition, the reigning habits, customs, and manners of the inhabitants of European and Asiatic Russia, embracing an immense population, and exhibiting in a most interesting point of view, society, both in its polished and in its savage state.

We have already observed, that Astracan is a town of considerable trade; there are a vast number of Indian merchants who resort there. A celebrated traveller, M. Pallas, makes the following observations on the idolatry of those merchants, which he was eye-witness to when at Astracan: they are denominated Multanes.

"These Multanes, whose country is now subject to Timur Shah of Argan, and whose language

bears the greatest analogy to that of the gypsies, perform an ablution in the Volga every evening previous to the worship of their idols. As they have no appropriate place of devotion, they meet in the chamber of the priest, who is not a regular bramin, but a dervise. The pagoda, or altar, is suspended in a corner on the right opposite the priest's couch. Every thing here, as well as in the chamber of the Forty Indians, appeared in a more miserable state than formerly, since a part of this people have abjured the religion of their ancestors, and have been incorporated among the citizens of Astracan, with a view to defraud their mercantile correspondents in India.

"I was struck," continues Professor Pallas, "with the appearance of the dervise, whom I had seen formerly clothed in a robe and girdle perfectly white, which dress appears to be an exclusive privilege of the bramins; but he now performed the religious ceremonies in a cloth vest buttoned up, and long white breeches partly covered with a reddish garb. His head was not shorn like the other Indians, but he wore short hair, and had a round spot, stained with vermilion, above his nose. The other Indians, on the contrary, were shaved, except a tuft of hair on the crown of the head. They generally, after bathing, describe some Indian character with turmeric on the forehead.

"We were requested to pull off our shoes, or clean them, as the others did, before we ascended the elevated part of the chamber which was appropriated to devotion. The dervise began the service with silent prayers and meditations; some of the



Indians then placed melons and other fruits on the floor beside the pagoda. The dervise placed himself before the shrine of the idols, which was illuminated by a row of candles in front. To the left of the priest on a small table there was a large double lamp filled with tallow, and kept burning night and day. The mirror, suspended on the wall above the table, was inverted: to the right, on the floor, there was a metal bason, with a salver which half covered it; and on the left were two cymbals of the janissaries, and two small musical cups, similar to those used by the Kalmuc Tartar priests. A small table was placed before the dervise, under the suspended pagoda, with a little censer, and a particular lamp with five wicks. The idolatrous worship commenced in a loud voice; an Indian pulled the string of the bells which hung at the side of the shrine, and two others took small cymbals in their hands. They all sung an harmonious litany, in unison to the tinkling of the bells and cymbals. This hymn was begun by the dervise himself, with a sacerdotal bell in his left hand, like that used by the lama. In the first division of the hymn, addressed to the idols, the dervise took the censer, and throwing some gum copal into it, he offered the incense before the shrine, upwards, downwards, and in a circular direction, a ceremony intended to represent the element of air. After having performed this part of the service, he took a square folded piece of cloth, which lay before the idols, and moved it in various oscillations before them, as symbolical of the element of the earth. He next successively lighted the five wicks of the lamp, and

during continued hymns, moved it in different directions before the idols, as emblematical of the element of fire. Having finished this rite, he placed the lamp on a small salver, and it was then carried by a member of the congregation to all the worshippers present; each of whom, after having reverently held his hand over the five flames, touched his eyes with his warm fingers: this part of the ceremony being concluded, the priest received the lamp, and extinguished the five flames with its pedestal, but the wick with which he had lighted them, he threw into the large lamp.

“At length the element of water was worshipped. For this purpose, pure water was kept ready in a large marine shell, which was placed in a brass vase, supported by the right corner of the pagoda. The dervise took this shell, and between the pauses of the song, he poured the water it contained with much dexterity from a considerable height into the half-covered cup on the floor; and, lastly, dipping his hand into this holy water, he besprinkled the whole congregation, who received this benediction very devoutly, and with folded hands.

“After the litany was finished, the dervise gave the cup with holy water to the person who chimed the bells, and sat down together with the whole congregation cross-legged on the carpet; he then caused a spoonful of holy water to be poured into the palm of each person’s hand, who religiously swallowed it, and moistened his head and eyes with his wet palm: the dervise afterward took the remainder, with which he washed his head and eyes, and poured it into the vase that supported the shell



before the idols. He then said a long prayer for the empress, the constituted authorities, and the people. After this ceremony, the Indians were presented with dried raisins without stones, on a plate; and after they had all risen, plates with sugar-candy and Pistachio nuts were offered to the strangers. When the whole ceremony was concluded, we were permitted to approach, and make drawings of the pagoda, without touching any part of it. At our request, the priest himself uncovered part of the idol, which was dressed in sky blue and pale rose-coloured silk cloaks, describing them to us by their names. In the back ground, elevated on a pedestal, in a direction from right to left, we observed the following: Sagenat, Tsettergun, Letseman, Rama, Bahart, and Lekumi. The first five were adorned with high moveable bonnets, the last was a representation of a female, dressed in a kind of turban, with a ring in her nose. On a lower step in the second row on the right side, were Murli and Mrohor; they were decorated with high bonnets, but without silk garments, and held staves in their right hands over their shoulders. In the midst there was a figure called Ashtabudsi, with eight arms, and crowned like Cybele: the next was a figure called Saddasho, in a sitting posture, with a round bonnet, and Honuman, an idol resembling Apis, with a dog's head, and rings in his ears. Small idols, and relics crowded together, occupied the front part of the shrine. Before the figures that held staves in their hands, we observed two distinguished figures of Vishnu and Brama. Further to the right, there were two very prominent sitting

idols, in the form of apes, with long pointed caps like crowns. In front of these was the figure of a tiger, or lioness, cast in copper, like the idols. Lastly, towards the corner, we noticed three figures, similar to the Duruma of the Mungolian lamas, which appeared to represent lingams; that in the middle leaned on a square pedestal of yellow amber, in the form of an obtuse cone, studded with grains of rice: two other small columns rested on a base similar to a lamp, which represented the female parts of generation. In the middle was placed a small idol, with a very high bonnet, called Gupaledshi; at its right side, there was a large black stone, and on the left two smaller ones of the same colour, brought from the Ganges, and regarded by the Indians as sacred. These fossils were of the species called shosa, and appeared to be an impression either of a bivalve muscle with long protuberances, or of a particular species of sea-hog. I have never seen among petrifications these stones with a figured elevation, by which the Indians endeavour to represent certain gross indelicacies, and heighten the colour by yellow streaks of turmeric. Such stones are held in the greatest veneration among them. Behind the foremost idol there was a folded silk garment lying across. In the corner stood the figure of a saddled lion. There was, besides, an image at the head of the shrine, with its face turned towards the other idols. He appeared almost withered, had large ears, and was called Gori. The front space likewise contained the bell of the idolatrous priest, as well as his rosary, and a sceptre, such as is peculiar to the



lama clergy. From these details, (adds M. Pallas) the great analogy between the idolatrous worship of the lama of Thibet, and some ceremonies of the Indians, and even of the antient Christian church, will be evident."

There is a very strong resemblance between the Northern Tartars subject to Russia, and some of the more northern nations of North America. M. Steller and M. Krackenninikow have endeavoured to point out a great similarity between the Kamtschatdals and the North American Indians. They resemble each other in traits of countenance; they prepare herbs in the same manner; they make use of the same wooden instrument to kindle a fire. Their hatchets are made of shell or bone, which inclines M. Steller to believe that the Americans had formerly a communication with the Kamtschatdals. The habits and bonnets of the former have a striking resemblance to those of the latter; all these particulars, with others which might be added, give cause to presume, that each nation had the same origin; which, in the opinion of the learned writer just mentioned, (Steller) may serve to resolve the famous question, From whence came the inhabitants of America? For even supposing that the continent of America had never been joined to that of Asia, those two quarters of the globe are so adjacent, that no person will deny, that it was very possible that the inhabitants of Asia might pass into America, to form colonies there; which is still more probable, that in the little space which separates them, there are such a number of islands highly favourable for such emigration.

We now proceed to a most important and interesting department of our work.

---

---

## RUSSIAN EMPIRE.

---

### CHAP. X.

---

#### *History of the Revolutions of the Russian Empire.*

THE barbarous inhabitants of the Northern nations made incursions of a most extensive nature, and acquired a vast proportion of territory. At the time when Scythia, once desolated, received new principalities, it is generally conjectured, that Russia was peopled by a colony of Slavonians.

It was customary, at an æra when civilization was unknown, for countries to be divided among petty princes, who were perpetually engaged in warfare with each other for the aggrandisement of their dominions. The neighbouring nations, the Novogorodians and the Scandinavians, viewed with concern the continued disputes which involved this Slavonian colony in misery, and a chieftain, of the former people, named Gostomisel, made a proposition to preclude the further shedding of blood—to vest the government in the hands of the Scandina-



vians. There were various motives which enhanced the propriety and necessity of immediately acceding to this advice ; the Slavonians were so enfeebled and exhausted, as not to be in a state of opposing any foreign attack which might be made upon them. No sooner had an alliance been entered into, than three princes of the Scandinavians were admitted to the exercise of the supreme authority in Russia ; their names were Ruric, Sincus, and Truwor, and tradition reports them, according to the Russian historians, to have been brothers. They each had separate residences ; one chose Ladoga, in the principality of Great Novogorod, for his habitation ; the other fixed his station at the White Lake ; while Truwor resided in the principality of Pleskow. The most cordial harmony reigned among these joint sovereigns, until the whole government devolved upon Ruric, in consequence of the death of his two brothers. Both Sincus and Truwor exercised a mild authority over their new subjects, and greatly extended the Slavonian territory. The same line of conduct was adopted and followed by Ruric. If the behaviour of that prince when his power was divided was so excellent, the event which suddenly elevated him to individual sovereignty had no tendency to make him deviate from the path he had hitherto pursued. His marked attention to the pure administration of justice was peculiarly manifested. There were certain officers under the crown, denominated *boyars*, who were possessed of great power, but who in some instances had exercised petty tyranny ; great complaints had been made as to such acts of injustice ; and Ruric, to counteract

any repetition of them, issued an edict, strictly enjoining, upon pain of rigid punishment, to exercise their authority in a due and proper manner, consistent with the principles of justice and humanity.

The early part of the Russian history is enveloped in a deal of obscurity, and affords also little worthy of notice, until near the latter end of the tenth century. An enterprising prince was then seated on the Russian throne. This was Wolodomir, who assumed the sovereignty in 976. The kingdom was in a perturbed state upon his coming to the throne, but he, by wise and prudent measures, restored peace and tranquillity. With an idea of augmenting the prosperity of his dominions, he formed an idea of strengthening his power by a matrimonial alliance. He directed his views in this respect to the fair sister of the Greek emperor, Basilus Porphyrogenitus, the princess Anne. One apparent great obstacle was to be removed ere the nuptials could be celebrated, this was a difference of opinion in matters of religion: Wolodomir was a heathen, Basilus a Christian. It has ever been the case, that obstructions of this nature have been more difficult to remove than any other; in the present instance, however, love was triumphant over theological prejudice; and Wolodomir led his bride to the altar, in consequence of his embracing Christianity, and receiving baptism.

The immense advantages derived from this marriage were at once apparent, as it made the kingdom of Russia intimately connected with the patriarchate of Constantinople. The royal convert



was zealously solicitous for the conversion of his subjects; and, astonishing to relate, on the very day the king was baptised, twenty thousand of his subjects were baptised also. Photius, the patriarch of Constantinople, deputed Michael Cyrus, a Greek ecclesiastic, to reside in Russia, and he was appointed by Wolodomir metropolitan of that kingdom. Thus was the present established religion of the great empire of Russia first propagated.

The Russian annals record an anecdote of this monarch which reflects high honour on his memory, and evidences the sincerity of his attachment to the new religion he had embraced:—Polygamy and concubmage are forbidden by the laws of Christianity; and this fact being explained to Wolodomir prior to being baptised, he discarded all his wives, and eight hundred concubines, and persuaded twelve of his illegitimate sons to be baptised with him the same day as he was.

The consequences of the connection with the Greek emperor were not merely the complete abolition of paganism, but an introduction of habits of civilization; the arts were encouraged, and the language of the country improved. It was at this æra that Greece abounded with learned professors; Wolodomir invited many of those eminent scholars to reside in Russia. Public schools were also established to render the progress of science more easy to a people hitherto buried in the grossest ignorance.

After swaying the sceptre of Russia with glory to himself, and benefit to his country, Wolodomir died A. D. 1008. This prince left a family of twelve sons

behind him, among whom he enjoined the government to be equally divided. It is not a little singular, that a man of such sound ability and penetration as this monarch unquestionably was, should have been guilty of such an error of judgment. He could not have adopted a surer method of exciting feuds and jealousies in the breasts of his children, and of kindling the flames of fraternal discord. Such was the event: the brothers took up arms against each other. Suantepolk, having endeavoured to wrest from two of his brothers dominions appertaining to them, was frustrated in his design, and fled for refuge to the court of a neighbouring sovereign, Boleslaus king of Poland. His cause being espoused, occasioned a war to break out between the Russians and the Poles. Jarislaus, one of the sons of Woldemir, headed the Russian troops; but he was defeated with a great loss of men, and part of his dominions.

Incensed at the ill fortune which had attended him, Jarislaus turned his arms against some of his brothers, who had hitherto been in peaceful enjoyment of their territories, and ultimately succeeded in gaining possession of them. Flushed with this success, he made a rash attempt to revenge himself for the disgrace he had incurred in his defeat by the Poles: he rushed forth impetuous to battle, but again was conquered, and imperiously obliged to submit to the authority of Boleslaus, as a vassal and tributary prince.

In the reign of Boleslaus's successor, the Russians revolted; but happily the progress of the war was arrested by a matrimonial treaty, which terminated



in the marriage of Micezlaus the Second, king of Poland, to the aunt of Jarislaus, thus cementing harmony and union between the two nations. Although a spirit of culpable ambition had prompted Jarislaus to make an unjustifiable attack upon his brethren, yet, when his throne was established in peace, he acted the part of a wise and great monarch, treading in the steps, and improving upon the example of his excellent father. He drew up a code of laws for the government of his subjects of Novogorod. This was the first system of legislation ever known in Russia. Sensible that a good education is the surest way to ensure respect to the laws, he established a school for three hundred pupils at Novogorod. His attachment to learning was a truly honourable trait in his character. He devoted frequently those hours set apart for rest to study. In fine, Jarislaus greatly resembled our illustrious Alfred the Great. This monarch died 1019, and left five sons, among whom he directed his dominions to be divided. It was remarkable, that Jarislaus should not foresee the disastrous consequences which must inevitably result from a deviation from the law of hereditary succession, especially as he himself had been so active an agent in the late civil wars. The sons of Jarislaus, like the sons of Wolodomir, were in a state of warfare with each other, and the Poles took advantage of the internal state of the kingdom. Russia remained in a most disastrous situation until the year 1237, when that kingdom was totally subdued by the Tartars.

Batto Battus, the khan of Tartary, was the conqueror; and he imposed the most tyrannical exac-

tions on the vanquished. He made not only the Russian princes pay homage to him, but he caused only those who were devoted to his cause to be elevated to the throne ; but the most mortifying circumstance, so disgraceful to Russian independence, was, that the vassal prince should every year personally bring to the khan of Tartary on foot, or to his ambassador, the tribute with which he was assessed. This was not all ; the most disgusting marks of abject submission was required : the Russian prince was to prostrate himself before the khan or his representative, offer him milk to drink ; and in case any drops should accidentally fall to the ground, he was then to stretch himself on the ground, and lick them up.

After this æra of national disgrace, Russia successively became a prey to the incursions of surrounding nations. At one time it was attacked by the Poles, at another by a sort of religious knight errants, who designated themselves as "The Knights of Livonia ;" or, "Brothers of the Short Sword." To oppose these invaders, the Russians had the powerful auxiliary aid of the Tartars ; but even their united strength was inadequate to the contest. Pleskow was captured by the army of Livonia, while that of Poland made an easy conquest of Black Russia, the Ukraine, and other parts. It was the victorious army of Casimir the Great, king of Poland, which achieved these conquests : he even made a claim to the throne of Russia, and absolutely became master of the greater part of that country, which he annexed to the kingdom of Poland.



The government of the Poles was so harsh and rigid as to make Casimir's new subjects very uneasy under the yoke; their manners, customs, and religion, were at variance. The Poles viewed the Russians as barbarians; while, on the other hand, the Russians considered the Poles as ruthless tyrants: certain it is, that the situation of the former was wretched in the extreme. Thus writhing under the lash of the conqueror, the Russians waited only for an opportunity to make an effort to regain their liberty. Such an opportunity having offered, they flew to arms; but the military discipline of the Polish army overcame every obstacle, and Casimir encamped his troops on the banks of the Vistula, to cover himself again with the laurels of victory.

Providence at length raised up, in the person of Demetrius Ivanovitz, a Russian hero of no small fame. He made the most energetic exertions to deliver his country from the yoke of bondage. He collected an army at Moscow, from whence he marched against the enemy. The Tartars, who had so recently been the allies of Russia, were now its enemies. Demetrius had an engagement with the khan, whom he several times defeated; and assumed to himself the title of "Grand Duke of Muscovy." This brave man, after nobly encountering the enemies of his country, perished in battle.

The young duke of Muscovy, Basilus Demetrevitz, inherited the talents of his father. He amply revenged his father's death, drove the Tartars out of his dominions, and conquered Bulgaria. But he exposed himself to danger by making an injudicious

alliance with the Poles, who could not forget that the Russians had been under their authority. With the mask of friendship they acceded to a treaty which they well knew how to turn to their own advantage.

Demetrevitz, although he had a son, yet left his crown to his brother Gregory. The right heir to the throne appealed to the people against his uncle's usurpation, and the character of the usurper was a favourable circumstance for the young prince. Gregory used his power in trampling upon the rights of his subjects, and exercising a most despotic tyranny. Basilus Demetrevitz was recognised as the legitimate sovereign, and as such he was proclaimed. The Tartars also agreed to support his just pretensions. A civil war now commenced; and Gregory banished his nephew to the principality of Uglitz. The usurping tyrant did not long survive this event, and upon his death Demetrevitz made his public entry into Moscow.

Gregory had two sons, Andrew and Demetrius, who were resolved to retain possession, if possible, of their father's regal authority. Hearing of the return of Basilus their cousin to Moscow, they laid siege to that city, and having gained possession of it, they ordered Basilus to be sent prisoner to a monastery at Troitz, where his eyes were barbarously put out. Enraged at this act of cruelty, the inhabitants of Moscow flew to arms, and drove Andrew and Demetrius out of the city, and again placed Basilus on the throne. The blind Basilus did not long enjoy the crown; and dying, he left it to his son John Basilovitz I. All the Russian historians agree



in stating that, prior to the time of Peter the First, he was the greatest of the Russian sovereigns, and that he laid the foundation of that magnificence and grandeur attached to the Russian empire, which Peter afterward completed. When John ascended the throne, he was merely a petty vassal prince. He meditated how and by what means he not only could free himself from the shackles of slavery, but also extend his dominions and aggrandise his territories. He had connected himself by marriage with the duke of Tever; and in consequence of some dispute with his father-in-law, he deposed him, and added his duchy to the dominions of Russia. That country was still in subjection to the Tartars, and it was the grand design of John to emancipate himself from that state of bondage.

An event which occurred at this time tended to excite him to attempt this grand work of deliverance. His first wife being dead, the duke of Muscovy married Sophia, the daughter of Thomas Paleologus, This lady was of an heroic and magnanimous disposition. She incessantly urged the necessity of relieving the country from its oppressors, and her admonitions were not lost upon her husband. Basilovitz immediately concerted measures for an attack upon the Tartars; and such success attended him, that he became master of Casan, and was there crowned king with the Tartar diadem.

Novogorod, which had long been in the hands of the Tartars, was retaken; but it required much blood and treasure to reduce it to obedience. Such a determined resistance was made to the besiegers, that seven years elapsed ere it yielded to the con-

querors; but Basilovitz was amply repaid by the terror which the capture of that city spread around the country. His fame attracted the notice of neighbouring potentates; his alliance was eagerly solicited, and many subordinate princes paid homage to him.

Having thus subdued the Tartars, Basilovitz turned his victorious arms upon the Poles, whose enmity to Russia had been so fatally and so frequently demonstrated. He marched his army into Lithuania, and Poland humbly sued for peace, which was granted for a short time; but in a subsequent attempt Basilovitz was not so successful, for his army was routed. The residue of the reign of this monarch was inglorious, and formed a sad contrast to the splendour which had encircled him during the former part of his administration. Sophia had been intriguing to advance the children she had by Basilovitz to the throne. Unfortunately, her husband was so misguided as to listen to her advice; and he immediately cancelled the claim of his grandson Demetrius as his successor, and ordered him to be committed to prison, and the eldest son of his queen Sophia, Gabriel, was declared presumptive heir to the crown. When, however, on his death-bed, the stings of conscience produced a change of sentiment, he sensibly felt the injury he had done to Demetrius: he sent for him, expressed his regret for the rash act he had committed, and made a public declaration, that he was by right, and should be his successor in the throne. Soon after which he expired, 1505.

Thus died, after a reign of fifty-five years, John



Basilovitz the First, a monarch of great enterprize, singular talent, and famous for his military exploits. He was the first who took the title of Czar of Muscovy. The hour of his decease was the signal for the committal of a daring outrage: Gabriel, the eldest son of the czarina Sophia, by her instigation, ordered Demetrius to be sent to prison, where he fell a sacrifice to cold and hunger; in consequence of which nefarious act, Gabriel Ivanonitz was crowned by the name of Basilius. The circumstances of the country of Poland were such as to indicate a spirit of revolution, of which Basilius was resolved to profit; but his expectations were frustrated by the Poles swearing allegiance to a new elected sovereign Sigismund the First. Resolved to extend his territories, Basilius with a large army, entered Lithuania, and laid siege to Smolensko. Notwithstanding the spirited resistance of the inhabitants, it was on the point of surrendering, when the agreeable intelligence was received of the near advance of a great army, composed of Poles and Tartars, to its relief. In consequence of which the Russians abandoned the siege, and made a precipitate retreat, and Basilius was constrained to make peace with Poland.

The aspiring disposition of the Russian monarch caused him to make a glaring infringement of the treaty into which he had been forced to enter; and having assembled a great force, he encamped his army near Pleskow; and the Poles, little suspecting his treachery, received him with unequivocal marks of friendship and respect. By secret machinations of the agents of Basilius, the constituted authorities

of Pleskow were basely assassinated, and the gates were thrown open to the Russians. In consequence of this event, the city of Smolensko surrendered to the czar, who commanded the generalissimo of his forces, Ivan Czeledin, to march into the duchy of Lithuania, with an army of eighty thousand men. The effective force of the Poles was only thirty-five thousand; a battle ensued on the banks of the Dnieper; the attack was made by the Lithuanians, who were warmly received by the Russians, who, with imprudent impetuosity, rushing upon the enemy, were placed in a most critical situation. The Polish cavalry made great havoc, and the Russians sustained a complete defeat. In endeavouring to escape being put to the sword, great numbers were drowned in attempting to cross the Dnieper. Among the prisoners who were taken was Czeledin, the Russian general, to whose imprudence the loss of the battle was owing.

When intelligence was conveyed to Basilius of the loss of this battle, he immediately fled to the capital of his empire. Prosperous as his reign had hitherto been, a reverse of fortune now attended Basilius; his dominions were invaded by the barbarians who inhabited Crim Tartary; and, to augment his misfortunes, his army in Livonia was entirely routed; and the invasion of the Tartars was crowned with such success, as to enable them to become masters of Moscow. Basilius had dispatched his brother Andrew to oppose their progress, but he was repulsed with great loss.—Terrified and affrighted, that czar who had but a short time before made ambitious attacks upon



neighbouring dominions, was brought to so humiliating a situation, as to be obliged to secrete himself under a haycock as he was travelling from Moscow to Novogorod, to avoid a detachment of the enemy. The consequence of the rapid successes of the Tartars was, that Basilius was compelled to sign a formal deed of vassalage to them, by which he engaged to pay a specific sum of money by way of poll for the head of every one of his subjects. It is natural for conquerors, especially among barbarous nations, to make a pompous display of their sovereignty: this was the case with the Tartar chief, who had captured the capital of Russia; he ordered his own statue to be erected in Moscow, a sight disgusting to the Russians, as ever placing before their eyes their degraded state and situation; and, to fill up the measure of Basilius's humiliation, the Tartar chief forced him to come in person to Moscow, to pay the first tribute money. How agonising must the feelings of that unfortunate prince have been to behold his chief city in the hands of his enemies, and a statue of the conqueror placed full in his view. After thus gratifying his pride and revenge, Machmetgerei (for that was the name of the Tartar) left Moscow, taking with him an immense booty, and prisoners to the amount of eighty thousand, who were all consigned to ignominious and cruel slavery. Basilius died 1533, and his son Ivan succeeded him on the throne; he was a minor, being only five years of age. There were two brothers of the late monarch who survived him, the infancy of the new sovereign was a fair opportunity for their conspiring to deprive him of the

crown. Their manœuvres, however, were unsuccessful, as the guardians of the young prince kept a watchful eye upon the conduct of his uncles. But if the domestic tranquillity was thus happily preserved, the public peace was interrupted by the unprovoked aggression of the Poles, who, however, were checked in their hostile career. Basilius, ere he had arrived to the age of twenty, gave symptoms of a wise and enlightened policy. Charles the Fifth was at this time emperor of Germany, and his fame had reached the shores of Muscovy, and Ivan dispatched a splendid embassy to compliment that illustrious monarch, and to form a treaty of alliance with him. The Russian ambassador was instructed to solicit the emperor to enter into a league with him against the Turks: Ivan also requested that priests might be sent to instruct him and his subjects in the tenets of the Latin church. Nor was this all; the embassy embraced subjects of the highest consequence. The emperor Charles was solicited to send to Russia men skilled in the science of legislation and jurisprudence, as also artists and mechanics of every description. In return for these favours, Ivan offered to pay the emperor annually two toris of gold for the space of twenty years. Charles was highly pleased with the liberality of the Russian monarch, and readily complied with his request. Three hundred German artists engaged to emigrate to Russia, and who were ordered by the ambassador to repair to Lubec on their route to Moscow, but here an unexpected interruption took place.

The inhabitants of Lubec were great monopolisers



of the commerce of the north ; it is natural to suppose that they would view this emigration with a jealous eye, as injurious to the commercial interests of Germany. A memorial was accordingly drawn up, and presented to the emperor, in which was powerfully stated the inexpediency and impolicy of affording instruction to a foreign nation by initiating them into branches of science, by which the export trade must gradually be diminished. This memorial occasioned a most material alteration to take place. The artists and mechanics, instead of proceeding to Russia, returned to their own homes ; and, when the Russian ambassador arrived at Lubec, he was immediately put under arrest ; but he escaped from his confinement, and upon his arrival at Moscow, gave a mournful statement of the issue of his embassy, which greatly enraged Ivan.

The emperor Charles unquestionably acted impolitic in so readily acceding to a measure which, at first sight, appeared inimical to the national commerce and prosperity ; but after the grant had been given, the persons selected, and the whole business arranged, it was equally unwise, not to say ungenerous, to rescind the order and recal the emigrants. As for the arrest of the ambassador, it appears to have been the sole act and deed of the merchants of Lubec.

However enraged Ivan Basilovitz was at the failure of his embassy, he thought it most prudent to stifle his indignation : to divert his thoughts from so unpleasant a subject, he prepared an expedition against the Tartars who inhabited Casan. This formed a campaign of seven years but it terminated

gloriously. The Casan Tartars were subjugated, and became tributary to Russia; the capital alone maintained its independence, by resisting the Russian army, which laid siege to it, and which it was unable to reduce, the siege was therefore raised. In 1571, the Crim Tartars, with an army of seventy thousand men, invaded the Russian dominions. The enemy's army passed the Volga, and marched within eighteen wersts of Moscow, where a battle took place, which proved fatal to the Russians. Moscow was immediately entered by the victorious army, and a scene of desolation was exhibited. The churches were set on fire, and the houses pillaged and plundered. The czar Ivan had left the city as soon as he received the intelligence of the defeat of his army, and he retired to a neighbouring monastery, which was strongly fortified. After the city had been entirely despoiled of every article of value, the houses were all set on fire, and the whole city, which embraced the circumference of forty miles, was reduced to ashes. This was but trivial in comparison of the immense number of persons who lost their lives during the dreadful conflagration and sacking of the city. It has been estimated that upwards of one hundred and twenty thousand persons perished. The Tartars were not able, however, to gain possession of the castle of Moscow; and having loaded themselves with booty, they marched away.

Ivan, though relieved from so cruel and formidable an enemy, was destined to be involved in hostilities. Scarcely had the Tartars retired, than he was attacked by the Poles and Swedes, the latter of whom defeated the Russians, and the



czar was compelled to negotiate a peace ; but, in 1579, the Russian dominions were again invaded by the Poles. The grounds of this attack were as follow. Poland had long made a claim to a considerable part of the Russian empire. Battori, an enterprising and ambitious man, was the reigning sovereign of Poland, and he meditated not merely the acquisition of that territory which he pretended to belong to Poland, but the complete conquest of Russia. For this purpose he raised a formidable and well-disciplined army, with which an invasion was made of the Russian dominions. The Russians were unable to cope with the superior discipline of the Poles ; and after many unsuccessful attempts to arrest the progress of the invaders, a treaty was entered into, but finally rejected by the Poles. In addition to this hostile army of Poland, Russia had to contend with Sweden. At length a treaty was concluded with Poland, but Sweden remained still at war with Ivan for some time after, when a peace was agreed on between those two northern powers.

It was the ill fate of this prince never long to enjoy the blessings of peace. No sooner had one nation ceased to attack him, than another appeared in warlike array against him. Already had his dominions been invaded by the Poles, the Swedes, and the Tartars, when, by the treaty with Sweden he might have flattered himself with the prospect of continued peace, Ivan was suddenly attacked by the Tartars, by whom his army was defeated. He did not long survive this unfortunate event. He died Anno 1584.

In the character of this prince we perceive traits of pre-eminent ability. His energy of mind was exemplified in the embassy to Germany; he wished to cause his subjects to emerge from a state of barbarism. In the field of battle he was brave and skilful. His talents appear to have excited the enmity and jealousy of the neighbouring nations; and hence arose those continued wars which disturbed his reign.

Ivan Basilovitz was succeeded in the throne by his son Theodore, who was a lamentable evidence, that talents are not hereditary. Theodore was notorious for his imbecility; and the head being thus weak, the whole body became faint. Intestine divisions rent the empire; and amidst the confusion of the nation, the brother-in-law of Theodore, a Russian nobleman named Gudenon, usurped the crown. The ambition of this man might have been tolerated, had it not prompted him to an act of great atrocity. Theodore had a brother, named Demetrius, who was only nine years of age: Gudenon was jealous of such a rival, and was resolved to remove him out of the way, he therefore caused him to be assassinated; and, fearful of so black a crime being divulged, the murderer himself was murdered. There is little doubt that these vile acts excited him to perpetrate one still viler. The deposed czar was poisoned, and public suspicion pointed to Gudenon as the person who administered it. Having thus raised himself by the basest means to the crown, and waded to the throne through blood, he assumed the imperial authority.

We must not, however, pass over the hypocritical



manner in which he acted in taking the crown. When his minions had prevailed upon the people to make him an offer of the crown, he made numerous excuses to be freed from accepting of it; it was a long time ere he would give his assent, and at length only upon condition of his success in a pretended expedition against the Tartars: but the fact was, that no body of Tartars had made their appearance; it was merely a stratagem, but by that manner he made the people compel him to accept the crown. To secure himself from any rivalry, he collected an army of five hundred thousand men, upon the same pretext of repelling the Tartar invasion. The usurper, however vile his private character, maintained the honour of his country. He concluded a peace with Poland, and formed an alliance with Sweden. Divine Providence, however, raised up a formidable enemy to this blood-stained usurper in the person of an impostor, who proclaimed that he was Demetrius, the young prince whom Gudenon had caused to be assassinated. This young man formed an alliance with the Poles, and greatly disturbed the peace and repose of the usurper, and made the crown totter on his head during the remaining years of his reign.

The Russian historians give a most affecting account of a horrible famine which prevailed in Moscow during the reign of this prince. Thousands of persons were to be seen laying dead in the streets, with their mouths full of hay, straw, or even the filthiest substances. Parents preyed upon their children, and children upon their parents. Corpulency in a person was sure to occasion him to fall

the first sacrifice in a family to the dreadful cravings of hunger. A woman was observed biting pieces out of the flesh of her child as she was carrying it along the streets. In another instance, four women having ordered a peasant to come to their house to receive a small sum of money, killed both him and his horse, and literally devoured them both. The horror of these scenes was increased by the long duration of the famine, which lasted three years, during which time upwards of five hundred thousand people perished!

In reviewing the character of Gudenon, there appears a strong resemblance to that of our Richard the Third. The measures by which he elevated himself to the throne, the art and hypocrisy he displayed ere he accepted the crown, was like that of the crook-backed tyrant; and he appears to have been in no respect deficient in those qualifications requisite for a great sovereign.

The succeeding czar, Theodore Borrissovitz, met with much opposition from the mock Demetrius, who was so successful as to depose Theodore, and seated himself on the throne. He formed a matrimonial connection with a Polish princess, but his reign was of short duration. He was killed in an insurrection of his subjects. The chief fomentor of the sedition was named Zuski, who, in his turn, assumed the imperial authority. His reign was turbulent, arising from the incessant attacks of the Poles and Swedes. Zuski was deposed in the year 1610, and the throne of Russia was filled by a Polish prince, Uladislaus, son of Sigismund king of Poland.



Such was the rooted animosity of the Poles to the Russians, that although the sovereign of Russia was the son of their monarch, yet the war was carried on with unabated fury. Enraged at the protracting of a war of so unnatural a nature, the Poles, who resided in great numbers at Moscow, were suddenly attacked by the Russians; the former immediately set fire to the city in various parts, and while the Russians were engaged in endeavouring to extinguish the flames, and save their families from the fury of the devouring element, the Poles fell upon them with their swords, and one hundred thousand Russians were massacred in cold blood. This sanguinary deed naturally called aloud for vengeance, and the Poles were ultimately expelled and driven not only from Moscow, but from the Russian dominions.

A Russian was now elected to fill the vacant throne; the choice fell upon Theodovitz Romanoff, a nobleman of good family and great talents; he was only seventeen years of age. His death happened in 1646, and his son Alexis ascended the throne, which he found encircled with trouble. He was perpetually exposed to commotions either from foreign or domestic foes. The reign of his son and successor, Theodovitz Alexisovitz, whose virtues and talents endeared him to his subjects, died in 1682, and was succeeded by one of the greatest sovereigns that ever swayed a sceptre, his brother Peter the First, better known by the name of Peter the Great.

Theodore had another brother besides Peter, namely John; but in consequence of a great infirmity,

the czar left the government of the empire to his brother Peter. An opposition was, however, raised to the new emperor; and John, owing to the intrigues of the princess Sophia, aunt to the young princes, was proclaimed emperor, that princess assuming the government as regent; but her power was little exercised, for conspiring against the life of her nephew Peter, the plot was discovered; the regent was displaced, and the immortal Peter the Great took the sovereignty, his brother John retaining only the nominal title.

Before we enter upon the history of the military exploits of this illustrious hero, we shall give a variety of anecdotes relative to his private life, for which we stand indebted to an interesting and authentic work, derived from the authority of M. Stehling, member of the council of state to the empress Catharine the Second, from which pleasing volume we are proud to make copious extracts.

The emperor Alexisovitz, the father of Peter, was unfortunately left a widower. He was in habits of condescending familiarity with his nobles; sometimes he would occasionally call in upon them, *sans ceremonie*, and dine or sup, as he might feel disposed. He one day visited the house of a nobleman, named Matweof: he observed the cloth laid for dinner; and, with a degree of pleasantry which approximated to his character, he said, "Matweof, I will dine with you to-day, but upon condition that no one shall be displaced on my account." In a short time after, the lady of the Russian nobleman, with a young girl, entered the room, and seated themselves at the table. The emperor was reserved,



but continued ogling the young female. After dinner, he thus addressed Matweof: "I know your wife, I have seen your son, but I was ignorant you had a daughter; why did you never mention her to me?" "Sire," replied Matweof, "because the young person you have thus noticed is not my daughter, she is the daughter of one of my friends." "Well," replied the czar, "she is a very pretty girl, and appears of an amiable disposition." "I can assure your majesty," said the nobleman, "that she is more amiable than beautiful: her temper is admirable; she is gentle, modest, and industrious." "Well," said the emperor, "we must make endeavours to marry her well." "Yes, sire," rejoined Matweof, "I am endeavouring to find out a good husband for her, sire; but it is not an easy thing, for fortune in these times is an indispensable requisite, and she has none. "I will myself think of a suitable match," said the emperor, "for her; do you also look out for one, and in a few days we will see each other again." The czar then took his leave.

A little time after, Alexis saw Matweof again: "Well, have you succeeded in finding a husband for your pretty ward?" "Sire," replied Matweof, "I have thought of one or two that might suit her; but hitherto I have had no opportunity of making a direct proposal on her account; and besides I fear, as I have already told your majesty, that her want of fortune will be an obstacle." "Then," exclaimed the emperor, "I have made a greater progress in this affair than you, Matweof; for I think I have found a suitable husband for her, and I hope she will not refuse him. He is rich enough for both,

good natured, virtuous, and is in a very good situation." Matweof was overwhelmed with gratitude; and in broken accents said, "Sire, may I venture to ask your majesty upon whom your choice has fallen?" "You shall soon know it," replied the czar; "in the mean time, conduct me to your fair protégée, I will have some conversation with her on the subject." The emperor was immediately led to the apartment of the young lady, to whom he made some equivocal offers, but without discovering himself. Upon leaving her, he took Matweof by the hand, "My friend," said he, "I will keep you no longer in suspense; I am more and more charmed with Natalia; (for that was her name) the husband whom I design for her is myself." Matweof immediately threw himself at the feet of his sovereign; and, after acknowledging the high honour intended for his ward, said to him, "Sire, I have brought up Natalia; she is in some degree related to me, and I rejoice in her good fortune as much as if she was my own daughter; but as I may be accused of having employed art and seduction to prompt your majesty to such an alliance, I beseech you not to make known your intention immediately. Let the most beautiful young women of the empire be assembled, according to custom. Natalia will be admitted into the number: you can then declare your choice; and thus your majesty will obtain your wishes without exposing me to the hatred and jealousy of the nobles and the court." The czar approved of this plan, and published an edict, in which he expressed his intention of marrying again, and his desire of choosing a wife from among the



daughters of the nobility. When the females were assembled, Natalia was selected as the object of the emperor's choice. He loved her; and the young czarina became the most amiable and best of wives: she was the mother of Peter.

There was a court of judicature established in Russia in 1670, which was denominated "The Secret Chancery." This was a most despotic tribunal. Any person who accused another, by pronouncing the words *Slovo i delo*, was compelled to receive the knout three times; and if, after this, he still persisted in his accusation, the accused was condemned to suffer death by the same punishment. A brave Swedish officer, in the service of the czar Peter, had by some means incurred the hatred of his servant, who accused him before the court of secret chancery of conspiring against the life of the emperor. The officer twice underwent the punishment of the knout, without his servant retracting the accusation, the officer was now about to be consigned to the hands of the executioner; when the czar, reflecting upon the excellent character this officer had hitherto borne, and the probability that, notwithstanding the accusation of his servant, he might be innocent, determined to save his life. He immediately, in company with a priest, entered into a rigid examination of the accuser, and at length succeeded in extorting a confession from him declaratory of the innocence of his master: upon which Peter ordered him immediately to be broken upon the wheel.

The intrepidity of the emperor was astonishingly displayed in the following instance. Intelligence was conveyed to him, that two persons, whose

names were mentioned, were the ringleaders of a banditti, who had engaged in a plot against his life, and had fixed upon carrying it into execution on a Friday, at one o'clock, on which day the emperor was expected to dine with some of his friends at a country-house near Petersburg. Peter sent a letter to the captain of his guard, with orders for him to repair at eleven o'clock with some troops to the house where the conspirators were to assemble, and to surround them. The czar, mistaking the hour, went alone at ten o'clock to the house where the conspirators were sitting. "Upon his approach, seeing neither captain or soldiers, he in his own mind, accused the former of great negligence, and hesitated whether or not he should retire; but the uncertainty of events, the mistake or possible infidelity of his officer, the peril of the moment—every thing, in short, concurred to make him resolve upon braving the danger to which he had unwarily exposed himself. He immediately entered the house where his enemies were concealed, presented himself in the midst of them; and, after eyeing them stedfastly one after another, took a chair, and seated himself. The astonished chiefs looked first at each other, and then at Peter, as if doubting what course they should pursue: at length one of them said, 'Is it time?' His companion answered, 'No, not yet.' Upon which the czar jumped up and seizing him by the throat, exclaimed, 'If this is not the time for *you*, wretch, it is the time for *me*, to make you suffer the punishment due to your crimes.' In an authoritative tone, he then ordered his companions to seize him, who instantly obeyed; and the conspirator, pale and



trembling, suffered himself to be chained without resistance. The same was then done by his command to the other chiefs; after which the rest, intimidated at his voice and manner, submitted to the same restraint, and delivered themselves up to him. At eleven o'clock the captain arrived, surrounded the house, and being informed that Peter was there, instantly hastened to him. The severe look of the czar bespoke his displeasure; but being shown the order which he had written to the officer, and finding that he had himself forgot the hour, he acknowledged his mistake. He then delivered into the hands of the soldiers the unresisting criminals, who were taken from his presence, and almost all of them punished with death."

It is well known, that the czar had a singular predilection for the city of St. Petersburg, which partiality was naturally the consequence of his having been the grand architect of it. The Russians, however, were dissatisfied at this preference, and invented a fabulous prediction, that this new city would be entirely swallowed up by the sea. To give a sanction to this prophecy, a miracle was announced, namely, that the image of the blessed virgin was seen to shed tears for the approaching fate of Petersburg. The emperor discovered and exposed the imposture.

Though Peter was an enemy to superstition, he tolerated throughout his dominions every religious sect, with the exception of the Hebrew nation. The czar happened to arrive one Sunday at Dantzic; "the gates of the town, which he found shut, were opened to him; and upon his entrance, not



*St. Petersburg.*

London: Published by T. Cadell, 4 Ky Lane, Paternoster Row 1817.





seeing any person in the streets, he inquired the reason, and was informed that every one was at church. The inhabitants were Lutherans ; and the czar, having the curiosity to be present during the Lutheran service, desired to be conducted to the principal church. As soon as he entered it, every person rose up out of respect, and the magistrates prepared to leave their seats, and advanced to meet him ; but he made a sign that the service should not be interrupted, and that every one should remain in his place ; and walking immediately up to the first burgomaster, or magistrate, he seated himself beside him. This burgomaster, according to the custom of the place, had on a large wig ; Peter, out of reverence, had taken off his fur cap, which he held in his hand, and feeling his head cold, he turned round, took off the wig of the burgomaster, and put it on his own head, not thinking that this method which he took to preserve himself from cold had any thing extraordinary in it. The astonishment of the assembly at the sight of the bald head of the magistrate, and that of Peter muffled up in a large wig, may be easily imagined. The sermon being ended, to which Peter listened with great attention, he rose to go away, and taking the wig off his head, returned it to the burgomaster, thanking him for it in the most obliging manner. There was no affectation in this : he did not imagine it would be even noticed, and was quite unconscious of the astonishment it occasioned at Dantzic, as he was in the habit of acting in the same manner by Menzicoff, whose wig he took off whenever he wanted to make use of it ; for as he had



but little hair, he was very susceptible of cold."

When passing through Berlin, Frederic the First, king of Prussia, late elector of Brandenburg, was on the throne. The king no sooner heard of the arrival of the czar, than he felt a high degree of satisfaction in being honoured with the presence of so illustrious a visitor. Peter sent a message, that he would pay a visit to the king; Frederic immediately gave orders for the most splendid preparations for his reception at court: all the nobles were ordered to appear in their richest dresses. A cavalcade of six of the royal carriages were dispatched to the czar, who, on seeing the magnificent procession, escaped from his residence by a back door, leaving the equipages and retinue before his hôtel. Peter walked immediately to the palace, attended only by one servant. Frederic was greatly surprised to see the great czar of Muscovy without the parade of state, and informed him of the preparations he had made to receive him, with those honours due to so great a sovereign. Peter thanked him for the profusion of honours which he had wished to lavish upon him; but declared that he came in that private manner from choice and inclination.

"The czar's aversion for the trammels of luxury and etiquette, and his taste for simplicity and liberty, prompted him to get rid of the ennui and constraint of public exhibition. He gave to Menzikoff, whom he had raised from nothing, the care of all those great solemnities and pompous trifles with which it has been thought necessary that

thrones should be environed ; and even those crowds of servants who besiege the tables of the great, and check by their presence all freedom of conversation, he took especial care, except on particular occasions, to dismiss. When he dined, without ceremony, at home, or with some of his friends, the attendants, after placing the dishes upon the table, withdrew, and left the guests to help themselves.

No monarch more strictly displayed even in his regal capacity, the virtues of a philosopher, and the good nature of a person in a private station. He always looked upon labour as the most solid basis of happiness and moral virtue, and he encouraged it by his own example, the surest method by which a sovereign can propagate what he thinks good and useful.

“ He once gave a moral lesson, which may be compared to that annual ceremony in China, in which the emperors, in the midst of their court, and in the presence of the people, put their imperial hands to the plough, and till a certain portion of land.

“ Peter, in the dress of a blacksmith, worked a whole day at the forge ; and, by the help of a strong and muscular arm, made several iron bars, for which he received a day’s wages according to the accustomed rate. With this sum he bought a pair of shoes, which he wore out upon his feet, and gloried in as having been earned by the labour of his own hands.” (*Stehling’s Anecdotes.*)

During the childhood of Peter the First, there was a revolt of the Strelitz, and the fury of the insurgents placed him in imminent danger of losing



his life. The royal palace was surrounded, many of the nobles were massacred, and the most cruel outrages committed. The princess Sophia, whose ambition was boundless, was the presumed cause of this insurrection. She was the sister of Peter. The young czar was conveyed away from the palace to the monastery of the Holy Trinity. The rebels went in search of him. "A party of them went to the monastery, and entering the church, discovered the young prince, who had taken refuge behind the altar. A Strelitz immediately ran up to him with a knife in order to kill him. The child looked stedfastly at him: already the furious soldier had seized him by the arm, and was about to strike him, when one of his companions called out aloud to him, 'Stop, stop! do not kill him at the altar; wait till you get him to another place.' They were proceeding to drag him from it, when they perceived galloping towards them a detachment of the guards on horseback, informed probably of the road which the Strelitz had taken, and of the precious life which they threatened. The Strelitz immediately escaped by another door, and fled.—Twenty years after, as Peter the First was at Cronstadt superintending the equipment of a fleet, he particularly remarked one of the sailors looked attentively at him, and changed colour. The sailor, seeing that the czar observed him, approached, and falling on his knees, said to him, 'Sire, I see you have discovered me: you are not mistaken. I am the wretch, who, armed with a knife, was going to strike you. I confess my crime; I deserve to be punished with death.' The czar asked him several

questions." It appeared that after he had fled from the church, he had changed his dress and his name, had entered into the navy, and from that time had led an honest and reputable life. The czar was much moved; he granted him his life, and was satisfied with banishing of him to one of the extremities of the empire, that he might not again have the chance of encountering the object of such unpleasant recollections. It is imagined, that the fright occasioned by the Strelitz at the monastery of the Trinity, was the cause of the spasms and convulsions to which he was afterward always subject."

The attachment which Peter ever evidenced for foreigners, his efforts to civilize his subjects, which they viewed as innovations, his unremitted exertions to disseminate knowledge and science, while it stamped immortal lustre on his name, excited a great spirit of hatred among his subjects, and the clergy especially. "The priesthood," says M. Stehling, "were, as at all times, ready to defend their influence and credit by assuming a regard for the interests of their religion, endangered, as they affirmed, by those innovations which threatened only the patriarchal authority. Peter, sensible that by the abuse of this authority his projects would be constantly thwarted, upon the death of the patriarch resolved to leave the office vacant; and when pressed to fill it by those senators who were ignorant of his secret views and designs, he eluded their demands under various pretexts. One day, in full senate, being urged more vehemently than usual upon this subject, he got up, and striking his breast with



one hand, said, pointing to himself, 'Here is your patriarch.' Then, with a menacing look, drawing with the other hand his sabre, and striking it upon the table, he added, 'And here is that which will be able to protect and defend him.' He proceeded afterwards to declare his intention of suppressing for ever the patriarchal dignity, and establishing in its stead the holy governing synod. Of this he made himself the head; and by these means obtained over the church an absolute power, which he shewed himself worthy of possessing by employing it for the good of his people.

"All the faculties of Peter were directed towards the instruction and happiness of his subjects. He was the first sovereign of Muscovy who caused a Russian translation to be made of those foreign works which might be useful to his nation. He would not begin with books of mere entertainment, but wisely gave the preference to those which treated of mechanics, navigation, ship-building, fortification, the art of war, &c."

During the war with Charles the Twelfth of Sweden, when the czar was besieging Narva, wide breaches had been made in the walls, and the ramparts were broken; although the besieged were pressed with hunger to the greatest extremity, the place still refused to surrender. This firmness of conduct determined the emperor to take it by storm. The distresses of the inhabitants at length forced the commander to hoist the white flag, but it was too late. The Russians were already upon the point of entering the place sword in hand. It was captured, and the most sanguinary scenes were

exhibited. Peter beheld with concern the effusion of human blood, he wished to stop his soldiers in their massacreing career. He beseeched, he expostulated, he threatened, but all in vain. It was requisite to use other measures, and he was forced to throw himself amongst them, and at length the carnage ceased. Having ordered the commander to be brought before him, he went up to him with his sword in his hand, and gave him a box on the ear, thus addressing him. 'Why wretch,' said he, 'did you hoist your flag so late: was it that your wives and children might be massacred? Look at this, (pointing to the sword which was unsheathed) it is not with the blood of the Swedes that it is stained, but with that of my own soldiers: you have reduced me to this cruel extremity to save your life, and the lives of your fellow citizens.'

"This anecdote," M. Stehling justly observes, "proves that Peter was humane, that he possessed greatness of mind; the following will shew his respect for the laws.

"One of the emperor's maids of honour was a Miss Hamilton, young, beautiful, and susceptible. Thanks to our prejudices, honour and pleasure are not in a young girl easily compatible with each other. Twice stifling the feelings of nature, Miss Hamilton had concealed her weakness by destroying the fruits of it. A third innocent victim perished: but she had been suspected and watched; her crime was clearly proved, and she was condemned to lose her head. Peter had not seen with impunity so many charms; he had loved her—she had made him happy; and Miss Hamilton in her prison, a prey to



the most cruel reflections, might nevertheless hope to escape death, since she could reckon the czar in the number of her lovers. The day destined for her execution arrived; she appeared upon the scaffold dressed in a robe of white satin, trimmed with black ribbons. Never had she looked so beautiful. The monarch approached to take leave of her; he embraced her, endeavoured to inspire her with courage, and said to her, 'I cannot save you; the law that condemns you is greater than I. Trust in God, and resign yourself to your fate.' Just at the moment, when the czar, much moved, had pressed her hand for the last time, and was leaving her, a single blow severed her head from her body, and terminated the life of the unfortunate Hamilton.

"Peter was not always as severe as he had been to Miss Hamilton. One evening, Firmont the surgeon, who had just been supping with him, killed one of his surgeons in a fit of anger and intoxication. He came the next day, threw himself at the feet of the czar, and confessed his crime. Peter granted him his life, and continued to live with him in the same familiarity as before. He enjoined him only to take care of the widow and children of the deceased, and to pension them; an injunction which Firmont punctually obeyed. Had Peter then more compassion for the weakness occasioned by wine, than for those occasioned by love? Did he think the case of Firmont more excusable than that of Miss Hamilton? or was Firmont so useful to him, that he suffered that consideration to make him forget his respect for the laws? or was it only the effect of one of those inconsistencies too inseparable from

the weakness of human nature? These are questions not easily to be decided. The ruling passion of this monarch was an attachment to all the useful arts, especially navigation, building, turning, and surgery. He was a phlebotomist, drew teeth, tapped for the dropsy, and performed several other surgical operations."

When the emperor was at Warsaw, he frequently visited a lady whose turn of mind and conversation he was much attached to. To this lady he frequently unbosomed himself, and consulted her even upon political affairs.

A few days after the defeat of Charles the Twelfth at Pultowa, he observed to her, that he thought himself in such a situation as no longer to stand in need of foreigners, and declared his intention of not admitting them again into his armies. The Polish lady wished to convince the czar of her opinion that he was erroneous in his idea. The subject was freely discussed, and each firmly maintained their opinions, and Peter quitted her with evident marks of dissatisfaction. The lady, who held the rank of a countess, had occasionally concerts performed in her private chapel; and not long after the *tete-a-tete* above mentioned, invited the emperor to dinner; during which time she ordered a concert to be performed. The czar listened, but appeared indifferent to the melodious sounds; and upon his being questioned as to his *nonchalance*, he thus replied, "I do not know what ails your musicians to day, but they play so ill, that I can scarcely recognise this music." "Do you think so, sire. My band is usually composed of foreign as well as Polish musicians; but



to-day there may possibly be only the latter. Indeed I am sure that is the case; come, I see foreigners cannot yet be dispensed with in my concerts; another time, sire, they shall be admitted." Peter immediately took the hint, and profiting by it, he totally abandoned the idea of excluding foreigners from serving in his army.

In the last war but one against the Turks, when Bender was besieged, Baron de Stein, a native of Germany, and a volunteer in the Russian army, a gallant and brave officer, was the first to mount the breach, in which hazardous service he received two severe wounds from a sabre, which in a short space of time terminated his existence. Though he was mortally wounded he refused to retire; and supported by two Russian soldiers, he remained upon the breach until the enemy was driven from it, and the town captured. The Polish countess had, therefore, the best of the argument in opposing the impolicy of prohibiting foreigners to serve in the Russian army.

Peter, though not polished in his manners, was partial to the society of the ladies, "who, when they possessed any merit, had great influence over him; and one of the most efficacious remedies which could be administered to him for those convulsions or spasms to which he was liable, was the sight of a beautiful woman, whose presence alone calmed and relieved him. His constant and tender attachment for Catharine Skavronski is well known. He was cruel (says Stehling) towards his son, whom he caused to be condemned to death, by the sentence of a tribunal, which he had himself dictated.

But it must be remembered that this son hated his father, and all his innovations were entirely governed by men attached to antient customs and antient barbarisms, by ecclesiastics, who were the declared enemies of all the improvements of Peter; and that, consequently, the monarch had no choice left but to put him to death, or submit to the total destruction of the fruits of all his own labours, which his son would have infallibly occasioned upon his accession to the throne. This action of Peter's deserves to be compared with that of Brutus, who sacrificed his sons for the good of his country."

Another son which the emperor had by his empress Catherine, and who was named Petrowitch, was fondly beloved by him, but he died in infancy. The grief of his father was excessive; he fell into a deep melancholy, neglected public business, and shunned all company. The empress was deeply affected at these afflicting circumstances; and not daring to intrude upon him in the distracted state of mind in which he was, she applied to Dolgorouki, (a senator of considerable note, and who had great influence with the czar) to interpose his services. Dolgorouki immediately assembled the senate; and setting before them a statement of his interview with the czarina, ordered the whole body to follow him. He led them on until they came to the door of Peter's apartment. He knocked loudly at the door several times without any answer being given, uttering at the same time expressions of alarm. The czar at length opened the door, and with an indignant tone of voice, demanded to know how any person could dare to violate the order he had given



to be left to himself. Dolgorouki answered, that the empire would be lost unless he appeared ; that for want of his presence the most important matters were suspended ; and that if he did not himself resume the direction of public affairs, they must of necessity elect a new sovereign. Peter, astonished at the intrepidity of the senator, left his retirement, and immediately accompanied Dolgorouki to the senate.

Of this patriotic senator another anecdote relative to the czar is related.

“ Peter in full senate having deliberated upon the best means to be adopted for digging the canal of Ladoga, resolved to employ for that purpose the peasants of Petersburg and Novogorod, and issued an edict for that purpose. Dolgorouki was not present at this sitting ; and upon being informed of the law being passed, and presented with a copy of it, he perused it with emotions of indignation, tore it to pieces, and trampled it under his feet. ‘ What have you done, Dolgorouki,’ said the affrighted senators, crowding round his person, ‘ you are ruined. What will the czar say, when he finds you have destroyed the law which he himself has drawn up, and of which he is the more tenacious, as he considers it the only means of effecting the project which he has so much at heart?’ ‘ Well,’ answered the senator, ‘ I will expose myself to his anger ; I will expose myself to every thing rather than suffer a decree to be carried into execution, which is so contrary to the welfare of the empire, and the true interests of the prince.’ Intelligence soon reached the ears of Peter of Dolgorouki’s conduct ; and, greatly agitated, he

repaired to the senate, and was beginning to threaten him, when that senator, with the utmost *sang froid*, said to him, 'Sire, it was my duty to oppose a law which you have not sufficiently considered, and the consequences of which would be the loss of two fine provinces, already half ruined and desolated, and incapable of furnishing you with peasants equal to the performance of the task you would impose upon them. Why, sire, do you not use for that purpose the Swedish prisoners of war; you have so great a number, and whom you cannot make use of for any better purpose?' The anger of the czar was calmed; and, making no reply to the able and intrepid senator, he profited by his counsels; and, leaving the law unexecuted, employed the Swedish prisoners to dig the canal: the greatest part of them perished in the work, and thus were preserved the lives of many useful subjects.

"Dolgorouki was a man of talents and integrity, but of brutal manners, passionate, unsociable, and gloomy; one of those, in short, who cannot be seen and known without being at once hated and esteemed. He had rendered himself an object of personal dislike to Peter; but that monarch, in consideration of his great qualities, overlooked his defects, and could never be persuaded to dismiss him from his favour. When the affair of the canal of Ladoga was in agitation, Dolgorouki said to the czar, 'What have the peasants of Petersburg and Novogorod done, that you should treat them thus?' With this rough frankness he always spoke to his sovereign; and that prince, with true greatness of mind, neglected the suggestions of self-love  
(9, 10.)



whilst listening to the wise counsels of this able man."

The czar was greatly addicted to an intemperate use of wine and of spirituous liquors, which frequently so inflamed his passions as to make him at times outrageous in his conduct. This failing, it is said, was owing to the bad education he received; his elder sister Sophia having purposely placed around him men of vicious and debauched characters with the sinister design of corrupting his morals, so as to make him the object of contempt when he should enter upon his regal functions. But the great mind of Peter made him soar above the example and the precepts of those men, and if he sometimes indulged to excess, it was in consequence not of a vitiated mind, but they were occasional deviations, in no way evidencing a depravity of heart.

"Weary of hearing continued accounts of the robberies which were committed in every part of the empire, he came one day to the senate, and ordered one of his ministers instantly to draw up and publish a law, purporting that for every theft, however small, the offender should be immediately hanged. 'But, sire,' said one of the senators to him, 'have you sufficiently considered this law? I can assure your majesty that if your subjects are to be hanged, you will very soon have none remaining; for alas! sire, we are all thieves, more or less; judge then, if it is expedient that your order should be carried into execution?' The czar laughed heartily at this speech; and, perceiving that he had been too precipitate, the law was not passed."

The emperor had a desire for the universal history of Puffendorf in the Russian language; he procured an ecclesiastic, who willingly undertook the translation. In this work of Puffendorf's there are some remarks not very flattering to the inhabitants of Muscovy. The monk, with great adroitness, carefully softened some, and in other instances altogether omitted those passages which he was suspicious would be offensive to his sovereign. When his translation was finished, he hastened to present it to the czar; and placing himself in an antichamber, waited until Peter passed along. The emperor perceiving him, accosted him thus, "What, have you finished already? I give you great credit for being so expeditious: let me see your manuscript." The monk presented it to him, and the czar eagerly glanced his eye over it, paid particular attention to the article respecting Russia. But when he came to the mutilated passages, and observed the omission of others, his countenance changed; and, looking sternly at the monk, he called him, and returned him his book with these words, "Translate this history as I ordered you, word for word, without making any alterations whatever." The monk retired greatly confused, and not a little chagrined.

During his reign some very curious manuscripts were discovered in Siberia. The characters could not well be decyphered, although they had some affinity to the Chinese. They were transmitted to Petersburg; but no orientalist being resident in that capital, they were forwarded to M. Bignon, librarian to the king of France, who gave them for



elucidation to M. Fourmont of the Academy of Inscriptions. That gentleman asserted, that they were written in the old Tangoutien tongue. After keeping them for some time, he returned them with a translation, which, with the original, were sent back to the czar, who testified his gratitude to the learned translator. Since that time, however, it has been ascertained, that Fourmont was totally ignorant of the language in which the manuscripts were written; that, instead of being Tangoutien, they were that of the language of the Mantchoux Tartars, the antient conquerors of China. The originals are now in the Academy of Sciences at Petersburg.

It has been before stated that the czar was sometimes extremely passionate, and was at such times by no means unsparing of blows. He carried a rope's end always about him, and an ivory headed cane in his hand, with one or the other he chastised not only his servants, but sometimes even the nobles and grandees of his court.

"He behaved now and then," says M. Stehling, "something like a woman in Switzerland, mother of a number of children more or less mutinous and unruly. When she was about to leave home to go into the country, or elsewhere, she used to call them all around her, and then whipped them stoutly one after the other. This operation performed, she said to them, 'My children, I shall be absent some days, during which time I know you will not fail, according to custom, to commit many follies. I have whipped you for them before-hand, for I do not choose to have that disagreeable job to do on

my return, it would poison the pleasure I should feel in seeing you again.' Then she made them come to her, embraced them tenderly, and dried their tears with kisses. It is evident this woman was an original: her method naturally leads me to that of Peter the First, who was not an ordinary person. . When with his cane or his cord he had chastised one of his servants, and he discovered the innocence of him whom he had fancied guilty, he ordered him to be brought before him, and said to him, 'My friend, I have chastised you unjustly, I allow it; and, as a reparation, I promise you, that when you commit a fault, you shall be exempted from punishment.'

"In this manner he acted one day by a cabin boy at Cronstadt. He was on board a yacht, where he had dined, and was taking his usual nap after dinner in the cabin of the vessel. He had given orders, that there should be no noise, and his officers well knew the necessity of not disturbing his slumbers. Some of them, however, being upon deck, and forgetting that the czar was sleeping under them, or probably having drank too freely, began to divert themselves by playing off some practical jokes upon each other. The czar was soon awaked by their noisy amusements. They heard him jump from his seat upon the floor, put on his slippers, and prepare to leave his room. They all fled immediately, hiding themselves in every creek and corner where they were the least likely to be seen by the czar. He soon came upon deck, armed with his formidable cane; but he could see



no one but a single cabin boy. Not doubting that this cabin boy was the author of all the bustle, he gave him fifty smart blows with his cane. The poor boy cried, wept, and protested his innocence, but in vain. As soon as the czar went away, the officers who had occasioned the noise, returned, while the cabin boy continued to weep and to sob. 'Will you be quiet?' said they to him. No,' answered he, 'I will not be quiet;' and he began to cry louder than before. 'Fine sport you have had with your tricks, and I am to be punished for them; his majesty has belaboured me till I can scarcely stand.'—'Will you be silent, little wretch; the czar will hear you.'—'So much the better; I will go and tell him, that it was not I, but you, who made the noise which awoke him.' The czar, who had heard the sound of voices disputing, had approached and listened to all that passed. He took no notice of it at that time; but an hour after, he sent for the cabin boy, and said to him, 'I find it is not you who have made all this bustle, although I punished you for it; but I promise you, that the next fault you commit, you shall be let off without being chastised.' Some time after, when the czar had forgotten all this, the same cabin boy did something which greatly enraged him, and his cane was already lifted to strike, when the boy, throwing himself at his feet, called aloud to him, 'Pardon me, pardon me, sire. I am he whom you beat the other day unjustly for a noise I did not make: your majesty promised me that I should escape punishment for the next fault I committed; I appeal to

your royal word.'—'True,' said the czar, 'I remember it: get ye gone, and take care not to do the same again.'

It has been remarked, that Peter sometimes entertained himself with turning, and in which he greatly excelled. In the Academy of Sciences at St. Alexander Nevoski, and at the church of the fortress, are to be seen several specimens of turning worked by the hands of this truly extraordinary man. "The czar had in his service a very skilful turner, he was at the head of the work shop in which the czar used to work; and it was the business of the young apprentice to take off the czar's cap as soon as he was seated at the turning-box. One day the boy performed his function rather too hastily, and in taking off his majesty's cap, pulled his hair very roughly. Peter, being much hurt, turned round in a great fury, got up, and seizing a hanger, pursued the apprentice, who fled with the speed of fear, concealing himself under a heap of wood, escaped the anger of the czar. The next day, his passion being cooled, he enquired for the apprentice, and caused every search to be made, but could not obtain any tidings of him. Several days passed, and no one could tell what was become of him. The czar, to induce him to return, caused his pardon to be published; but the apprentice had fled so far from Petersburg, that the news never reached him. He was absent ten years, entered into another profession, and did not return to Petersburg till long after the death of the emperor; he was recognised by his former master, the turner, and settled advantageously."



The following anecdote exhibits a pleasing trait in the character of this great prince. He was travelling in Russia, and stopped to dine in a village, he was immediately surrounded by the villagers, who loved and respected their sovereign. He was sitting at table, and the room was crowded with persons of both sexes. Amongst this assemblage was a beautiful young female, who had concealed herself behind a door, and every fair opportunity she seized timidly to step forward to gaze upon Peter. Whenever she shewed her pretty face, the rustic crowd began to laugh and whisper. The czar, perceiving this, requested her to advance, and inform him, what was the cause of their mirth. At this question the laughter redoubled; and at last he was informed, that the young peasant who had concealed herself was forsaken by all her companions; that she had borne a child to a German officer, who had afterwards abandoned her; that from that period her conduct had been irreproachable, and that she was very industrious. The young girl came forward, with her eyes cast upon the ground, and her face covered with blushes. The czar encouraged her, took her by the hand, made her relate the history of her amours; and, after embracing and consoling her, gave her a handful of rubles, and ordered all the people of the village to receive and treat her as before: he asked to see the child, who was strong and hearty, said he would take care of it; and desired, that, when old enough, he should be brought to court. "He treated," says M. Stehling, "all his subjects, especially the lower classes, with the same good nature, the same

delightful simplicity so characteristic of the great man, but not always with the same generosity.

One of the valets of the czar, named Polbajaroff, was seized with a fit of jealousy, and without any just cause; in consequence of his suspicions, was determined to revenge his presumed injury. One day he lamented to the emperor, that his wife was dreadfully tormented with the tooth-ache. Peter, who prided himself in his skill as a dentist, said to him, "Come along, take me to her; I will soon cure her malady, I will draw her tooth out." They both proceeded to the patient, whom Peter ordered to open her mouth, and enquired which tooth it was gave her pain. "None, sire," said she. "Ah! sire," replied the husband, "that is her way; as soon as any one attempts to relieve her, by pulling out her tooth, she declares she feel no pain. Look, sire, there is the bad tooth." The czar desired Polbajaroff to hold his wife's head; he then took out his pincers, and having forcibly opened her mouth, fitted the instrument on the tooth, and drew it out. A few days after, Peter was informed that the supposed patient on whom he had operated, was never troubled with the tooth-ache, and that the tooth he had drawn was perfectly sound. Having discovered that it was an artifice of her husband's, he gave him a severe beating.

When the emperor visited Paris, he inspected the academies, the manufactories, especially that of the Gobelins, the public libraries, the royal menagerie, and every thing curious in the capital. When at the mint, he was desirous of seeing the process in the coining of medals. The master coiner, being



ordered to strike off one in his presence, the machine was immediately prepared, and the different parts of it explained to him. Several medals were then struck off, one of which accidentally fell at the feet of the monarch; he immediately picked it up to examine it minutely; but what was his astonishment, at beholding on one side an impression of his own bust, and on the other a figure of Fame, hovering in the air over a river, with the following panegyric motto—" *Crescit eundo.*" This very medal is now preserved in the collection of medals at the academy of Petersburg.

The famous Madam de Maintenon, the mistress of Louis the Fourteenth, was at this time living, but in a state of seclusion, at St. Cyr, employed in acts of devotion. The czar wished to see so extraordinary a woman. She had given orders not to be disturbed by the intrusion of visitors, but an exception was made in favour of the emperor. Maintenon was in bed, and Peter seated himself at the bottom of it, and entered into a conversation with her at once judicious and pious. Peter was ignorant of the French language, and consequently was obliged to have an interpreter. The duke of Orleans, the regent of France, introduced Louis the Fifteenth, (who was then only seven years of age) to Peter, who took him up in his arms, and, embracing him, said, " May your majesty increase in happiness as in stature; and may your reign be long and prosperous. Perhaps the time may come when we shall stand in need of each other's assistance."

As he was travelling through a village in France, he observed in a garden appertaining to a parsonage

house, a man dressed in a cassock, with a spade in his hand, with which he was digging. The czar alighted from his carriage, and entering the garden, enquired of the person thus engaged, who and what he was? "Sir," replied the man, "I am the clergyman of the village."—"I thought you was a gardener; why are you employed in this manner?"—"The revenues of my living," said the pastor, "being but very moderate, I do not choose to be an expense to my parishioners, but wish rather to have it in my power to assist them. They respect me the more, when they see that, to procure myself some of the conveniences of life, I improve this garden; and in this humble occupation spend as much of my time as the duties of my ministry will allow."—"You are an honest man," said the emperor, "and I esteem you the more for thinking and acting in this manner. Pray, what is your name? The clergyman gave it, and Peter, taking out his tablets, wrote it down; and, after informing him of the rank of his visitor, and giving him many demonstrations of kindness and regard, he took his leave, and entered his carriage. Upon his return to Moscow, he was not forgetful of the scene he had beheld, and he often used to impress upon the Russian ecclesiastics the amiable example of the French rector.

While in England he viewed every thing worthy of notice. His situation at Deptford made him a frequent visitor to Greenwich hospital. Being asked by king William what he thought of that magnificent building, "Sire," said the czar, "I think you would not do amiss in living at Greenwich, and



lodging your sailors here." King William was then at his palace at Kensington.

At Amsterdam he happened one day to fall in with a Dutch captain, whom he recognised as having seen at Archangel; he accosted him by saying, "Which do you like best, Archangel or Petersburg?" The captain roughly answered, "Archangel, my lord."—"And why?"—"Because we can get good omelets there, and they give us none at Petersburg." Peter, so far from being offended, condescended to invite him and some other Dutch captains to dine with him on omelets the next day, pleasantly observing, that he hoped they would prove as good as those of Archangel. He accordingly ordered his cook, Velten, to dress that dish in every shape and fashion; and he gave this entertainment in the garden of his summer palace, where the Dutch mariners were sumptuously entertained.

"Narrow-minded monarchs," says Stehling, "are fearful of mixing with and descending amongst their inferiors, for by such a proceeding, they discover their real insignificance: but, as true greatness is conscious of its dignity, and feels that it shall lose nothing by the closest inspection, this monarch gave up his whole character to the observation of mankind, and was not himself exempt from those *naivetes*, which draw down the censure of fools, and are oftener than is supposed the characteristics of real genius." (*Melanges de litterature, l'Histoire, Morals, &c. by le Comte d'Escherny.*)

The empress Catherine was very affectionate and attentive in her behaviour to her illustrious husband. The czar was very frequently obliged to leave his

dominions, and Catharine was ever planning some way agreeably to surprise him on his return. The following is a sweet trait of her solicitude on this point: The czarina, in her rides in and about Petersburg, had often remarked a spot of ground, about fifteen wersts of the capital, which she considered as very well calculated for a summer residence for the czar. It was an elevated situation, commanding a fine prospect. There Catherine repaired, and superintended the erecting of a summer-house, laying out the gardens, &c. Upon Peter's return, his wife requested him to take an excursion from Petersburg, she having a desire to shew him a delightful spot with which he was totally unacquainted. Being charmed with the beauty of the place, he was still more delighted with the summer-house, which had been prepared for his reception. The approach was through a wood, so that the scenery burst upon him at once, and he found not only a beautiful habitation, but also a number of people collected together to receive him, and congratulate him upon his arrival. Overwhelmed with pleasurable sensations, he publicly embraced the empress, thanking her for the generous attention she had paid him. This place was afterwards called Czarko-celo.

This great man was very regular in the domestic arrangements of his private affairs. He generally rose at four in the morning, when he gave audience to his several ministers. He received their statements, examined them, and gave such instructions as were requisite. After this discussion of public business, he sat down to breakfast, which was very slight.



Immediately as that was concluded, he repaired to the admiralty, and from thence to the senate. His dinner hour was eleven o'clock, and the repast consisted of various dishes, but those he was most attached to, were cold roast lamb, ham, cold pig soaked in sour cream, soup, with sour or salted cabbage, and old cheese. Dinner ended, he put on a dressing gown, and took a nap for two hours, after which he received his ministers, to hear their reports as to the affairs which had been canvassed in the morning. His usual drink was kissleschtchi, quass, and occasionally a little brandy : sometimes he would drink Hermitage wine.

“ In the feasts which were given at court, or in those which he gave himself to parties less numerous, he liked joy and gaiety to prevail ; and, as he looked upon wine as a proper stimulant for producing this effect, he was not averse to its being used rather freely, provided that decency was observed. Whenever it was in the slightest degree violated, his method was to put his guests, as well as himself, into such a state of complete intoxication, as to deprive them of all means of committing any further disorders.”

The czar had a natural and violent antipathy to beetles ; but what is more singular, he had an aversion to water. So fearful was he of beetles, that when travelling through the villages, in which they were to be found in vast quantities, he would never enter the huts of the peasant, but would dine and even sleep in his carriage. Once happening to pass a house which had rather a genteel appearance, the emperor stopped his carriage, and ordered his

servants to make enquiry of the master of the house if there were any beetles in it; and upon being assured there were not, he alighted and entered it. The master of the house, with eager impetuosity, wishing to convince his sovereign that he had nothing to fear from beetles, there not being any in his house, thus addressed him---“I assure you, sire, I am entirely free from those insects: look sire, (shewing him at the same time a beetle nailed against the wall) that is the only one that has ever dared to shew himself here; and I have punished him for it, by nailing him up as you see.” Nothing could be more *mal-a-propos*: Peter, upon viewing the insect, changed colour, writhed and trembled; and then turning round, laid his cane upon the shoulders of the unfortunate host with no small degree of vengeance.

His antipathy to water he surmounted completely so as even to act as pilot when on the water. At one time he invited all the foreign ministers to accompany him as far as Cronstadt by sea. They all embarked in a small Dutch vessel, of which Peter was the pilot. “A favourable wind gently swelled the sails; and, for the space of twenty wersts, nothing could be more prosperous than their navigation, when, all at once, a violent west wind arose; and Peter, perceiving at a distance a cloud which threatened a tempest, prepared, though dissembling the danger, to oppose the storm, which soon burst forth with a fury that threatened to overwhelm the vessel. The ministers, with one accord, approached the czar, and entreated him to land them near Peterhoff, but he refused their request, and every time they



renewed it, endeavoured to encourage them, by assuring them that they had nothing to fear. Nevertheless the storm, accompanied with thunder and lightning, continued to increase, and the vessel, no longer manageable, and tossed up and down by the fury of the waves, appeared every moment to be threatened with destruction. Cries of distress were heard on all sides, but Peter retained his firmness and presence of mind, and continued to oppose, by his skill and science, the violence of the storm. His affrighted companions again besought him to return to land; but the czar, always in motion, and giving his orders, and attending to the management of the vessel, did not even hear them; till at last M. de Hoos, Polish and Saxon minister, bolder, because more terrified, than the rest, approaching, said to him in a lamentable and serious tone, 'I entreat your majesty, for the love of God, to go back to Petersburg, or at least to land us on the nearest shore of Peterhoff; and to consider, that, as the king, my master, has not sent me to Russia to be drowned, if I should perish here, as it appears evident will be the case, your majesty will be answerable to my court, for my death.' The czar, notwithstanding his perilous situation, could not forbear laughing at these words, and coolly answered him, 'Never fear, Monsieur Van Hoos; if you die, we shall all die together, and your court will then have nobody left to be accountable for your loss.' Peter, finding the impossibility of reaching Cronstadt, gave up all thoughts of it, and choosing a lucky moment landed safely, though with some difficulty, at Peterhoff. A good supper was soon gotten ready; and the

party, in the intervals of their repast, which was seasoned with the best Hungary wine, did not forget, whilst laughing at their recent fears, to rally Monsieur de Hoos, so that in a short time, that joy and satisfaction prevailed, which a recent escape from a great danger, seldom fails to produce. The following morning at day break, while his companions were asleep, Peter set sail in his vessel for Cronstadt, from whence he sent some sloops to Peterhoff to convey the rest of the party." Surely of this magnanimous emperor it may be literally said, that he was the pilot who weathered the storm.

The czar Peter took great pains to introduce a new system of military tactics, and this he did so successfully, by the aid of foreigners eminently qualified for the purpose, that he made the Russian, with the exception of the English, the best soldier in the world.

He led his troops against the Ottoman Porte in 1696, and was victorious both by land and sea. His soldiers captured the strong fortress of Azov, and the Turkish fleet experienced a signal defeat.

The accession of Charles the Twelfth to the crown of Sweden, and the aspiring ambition of that young monarch, occasioned a confederacy to be entered against him, in which the czar of Muscovy and the kings of Denmark and Poland were combined. Peter entered Ingria at the head of eighty thousand men, and laid siege to Narva. The army of Charles did not exceed twenty thousand men, but such was his impatience, that he advanced with not half the number of his forces, and defeated the Russians, and Peter was obliged to raise the siege.



But the battle of Pultowa, in 1709, covered the czar of Russia with laurels of glory; in that battle Charles, the mad imitator of Alexander the son of Philip of Macedon, who always, according to Voltaire, used to carry a copy of Quintus Curtius in his pocket, was obliged to seek an asylum among the Turks. The king of Sweden had a powerful ally in the grand sultan, who warmly espousing his cause, ordered a large assembly to be raised to oppose the czar. The khan of Crim Tartary was also in his interest, and joined his forces to those of the Sublime Porte. Peter was at this time besieging Riga, but upon receiving intelligence of these events, he raised the siege, and with twenty-four thousand men, entered Moldavia. The grand vizier marched against the czar, who probably, relying upon his military abilities too much, was incautiously placed in a situation in which he could neither advance or retreat. The czar wished to emulate his army to deeds of glory, and gave orders for breaking through the enemy's line with fixed bayonets; but the Russian soldiers were not animated with the spirit of their illustrious commander. Catherine, unknown to her husband, having noticed the desponding temper of the army, entered into a treaty with the vizier, which was signed in the short space of six hours.

Peter died as he had lived, a great man. All the circumstances of his illness, and the cause of his death, shew him to be a very uncommon person. Too frequent a use of strong liquors brought on a disease in the neck of the bladder. He could not resolve to discover the seat of his disorder. This

conqueror, this intrepid warrior, who had so frequently braved death at the head of his battalions, could not surmount a false shame, and this cost him his life ; for it is probable, from the great strength of his constitution, that if his disorder, which at first was very trifling, had been checked in the beginning, he might have lived thirty years longer.

It seems that this species of modesty is one of those amiable weaknesses which are frequently attached to great men, but the fatal effects of which the world, in other instances than the present, has had reason to deplore. If Peter had lived thirty years longer, he would have seen the revolution which he had prepared almost completed. What good might he not have done to the Russians ! How many abuses would he not have corrected, and what useful establishments might he not then have formed ! Obligated to seek some relief for his disorder, he secretly took remedies from an empiric, whom one of his valets-de-chambre brought to him, and who engaged, according to custom, to cure him. But in spite of these remedies, the czar continued to grow worse, till at last, subdued by pain, he was forced to declare his complaint to Blumenstrot, his physician, who, unwilling to take upon himself a cure of such importance, sent to Moscow for Doctor Bredlow. The progress of the disease, however, rendered ineffectual all those ordinary remedies by which an incipient inflammation would perhaps have been allayed.

“ He endured the most cruel sufferings, and Sir — Horne, an English surgeon, performed an operation which the czar sustained with the utmost



fortitude, and which proved successful. He was relieved and in a fair way of being perfectly cured; but, unable to endure the inactivity which was necessary for his recovery, he resolved to visit the works of the canal of Ladoga, a great enterprise, conducted and directed by the *compte de Munich*. From thence he went to inspect his manufactures of arms, the salt-pits, forges, and other establishments, the offspring of his own genius, and of that knowledge which he had acquired in his travels. He went by water, his favourite conveyance; and, as it was in the month of October, and the weather was already severe, he suffered so much from the cold, that his physician advised him to return immediately to Petersburg. He was not yet unwell, but he was threatened with a return of his complaint, which was indeed brought about by an exertion worthy of his great mind—an exertion in the cause of humanity.

“As he was coming back by the *Achta*, a boat near him was overturned; and, seeing the sailors in danger of being drowned, he sent some of his crew to their assistance. His height and strength rendered him fit for a service of this nature, and he succeeded in rescuing all the sailors. He no longer felt his disorder; nevertheless, the cold and damp seized him, and upon his arrival at Petersburg, he had a relapse, which put an end to his life in the fifty-third year of his age.

The character of this illustrious sovereign of the North has been ably drawn by a French writer in a presumed letter to the late *Rt. Hon. W. Pitt*.

“The defects, the vices, and, above all, the

crimes of Peter I. have lessened the splendour of his glory, and he ought rather to be reckoned among the number of extraordinary, than in the small circle of really great men. Under the former title he excites my admiration; all extraordinary characters have a right to it; but, according to the obstacles surmounted by them, they comparatively demand the tribute. Your illustrious father, who by turns was the Demosthenes and Richelieu of England, to me appears to have merited glory in a much greater degree, from the consideration of having risen superior to the rank in which he set out, than if the chance of birthright, or the hand of fortune, had bestowed it upon him. Although an Englishman, I am not blind to the injustice of my country: I know that, even with our constitution, so much the subject of panegyric, plebeian merit with difficulty raises her head.

“ With obstacles of another kind, and of a nature much more terrible, Peter I. had to contend. These were—the frenzy of superstition, and the innumerable prejudices of a nation still sunk in barbarism; but the obstinate perseverance of his character enabled him to triumph over them. Whilst on the one hand he opposed the formidable efforts of the conqueror of Narva, on the other he built ships, he sketched out plans for schools, he opened new roads to commerce; in fine, he laid the foundation of that ever-increasing grandeur which threatens the greatest part of Europe with invasion.” (*Life of Catherine II. of Russia*, translated from the French by the Rev. W. W. Dakens.)

Upon the death of Peter the First, his empress



Catherine mounted the throne, under the title of Catherine the First. This princess was much beloved and revered. Her abilities had been conspicuously displayed during the life of her husband; she, however, retaliated upon the infidelity of Peter by illicit amours.

Moens de la Croix, a young man of Flemish extraction, officiated in her household as chamberlain: he was elegant in his person, and prepossessing in his manners. The empress soon felt an attachment, which kindled all the flames of love. A faithful domestic of Peter, named Jagaskychins, soon perceived the growing passion of Catherine, and apprised the emperor of it. Peter swore vengeance, but first resolved to satisfy himself as to the truth of the accusation. He therefore left Petersburg upon a feigned pretence of repairing to one of his summer palaces, whereas, in fact, he went to one of his winter residences. He then sent a confidential page to the empress, to inform her that he was at Dupka, a small distance from Petersburg.

The page found the empress under an arbour of jessamine in the arms of her lover; Moen's sister was placed as a guard. Peter, informed by his servant of what he had seen, hastened in a paroxysm of rage to the spot, and knocked down a page who opposed his passage, and struck Catherine with his cane. On the following day, he entered the empress's house, and walking up to a splendid mirror in her apartment, dashed it to pieces with his cane: "Seest thou," said he, in a menacing tone of voice, "that, with a single stroke,

I have reduced that glass to the dust from whence it came. Catherine, who felt the allusion, replied in a mild tone of voice, "True; but having destroyed the greatest ornament of your palace, do you think on that account it will become more brilliant?" This answer mollified the rage of the czar, and he entered into an amicable agreement with the empress. A more unpleasant fate awaited Moens and his sister, Madam Balks; they were each of them arrested and confined in one of the emperor's palaces, no person being allowed access to them, their provisions being carried to them by Peter himself. Moens was beheaded, and his sister received the punishment of the knout from the emperor himself, and was afterwards banished into Siberia.

The day ensuing, after Moens had been decapitated, the czar conducted the empress in an open carriage to a place where, affixed to a pole, she beheld the head of her lover. She appeared to disguise her feelings; but, with a deep sigh, exclaimed, "What a pity it is, that, among courtiers, there should be so much corruption."

The reign of Catherine was glorious. She died in 1727, and was succeeded by Peter the Second. During the period of his government many public commotions took place, and prince Menzikoff, the great favourite of Peter the First, was exiled to Siberia. This prince died of the small pox.

The Russian senate and nobility, upon the demise of Peter the Second, elected Anne, duchess of Courland, second daughter to John, Peter's eldest brother, to fill the throne. This princess died in



1740, and left by will the crown to John, the son of her niece, the princess of Mecklenburg. He was an infant of two years of age, and Count Biron was appointed regent of the realm. A change of affairs, however, soon took place, and the count was exiled to Siberia. The princess Anne of Mecklenburg, in conjunction with her husband, now took upon them the administration of the government; but the Russians, disapproving of their measures, raised Elizabeth, the daughter of Peter the Great, to the crown. Elizabeth Petrounce was his daughter by Catherine: she greatly resembled her mother. Her person was elegant, and admirably proportioned: "Her features were rather masculine; but in her physiognomy there was something inexpressibly sweet, which, to a great degree, were enhanced by the captivating refinement of a conversation often cheerful, but always flattering. If, however, she equalled her mother in those advantages that render female society alluring; if she surpassed her in a moderate taste for pleasures, she was far from possessing, like Catherine, that magnanimity of soul, which imparts to its possessor an irresistible ascendancy over all within its influence. Instead of the knowledge requisite to govern, Elizabeth resigned her will to unremitted direction.

Elizabeth, like the illustrious queen of England of that name, refused to form a matrimonial alliance; but she was in no respect deaf to the voice of love. Field-marshal Razumoffsky, her grand huntsman, clandestinely gained her imperial hand. The empress did not limit her favours to him, but Razumoffsky maintained the pre-eminence. Elizabeth

invited Charles Peter Ulric, son of the duke of Holstein Gottorp, and of Anne, daughter of Peter the Great, to Petersburg, in 1742, after having made him abjure the Lutheran tenets and embrace those of the Greek church. She declared him grand duke of Russia, and presumptive heir to the crown. He assumed the name of Peter Federowitsch. The empress, although secretly married to Razumoffsky, was afterward publicly affianced to the young prince of Holstein Euten; but upon the eve of the celebration of the marriage, the prince was suddenly taken ill and died, which was a source of great affliction to Elizabeth, as she had an extraordinary attachment to him.

The princess of Anhalt Zerbist, sister of the prince of Holstein, excited by the tender affection which the empress had witnessed for her brother, secretly conspired to place her daughter upon the throne: in this design she was encouraged by Frederic the Great, king of Prussia. The plan was accelerated by the marriage of her daughter to the grand duke of Russia. That prince, however, prior to that event, had been dreadfully mutilated and disfigured by the ravages of the small pox.

"The marriage was celebrated," says the author of the Life of Catherine the Second; "but in spite of the mutual inclination that at first, appeared to engage their love, nature had not destined them to enjoy that pleasure long; and the sudden change on the prince's features, was not the only cause of the youthful Catherine's indifference: another obstacle, which, though easy to be removed, seemed still more cruel, and opposed their felicity;—neither the ardour



of his passion, nor the repeated efforts of nature, could enable him to consummate the marriage. Had the prince confided in some person of experience, this resistance to the completion of his wishes would have been soon removed; but the modest shame of revealing such a circumstance, prevailed over inclination; and the princess, to whom he was no longer acceptable, and who was at that time, perhaps, equally virtuous with himself, neither attempted to comfort her husband, nor superinduce those means that might have restored him to her arms. They lived, however, to appearance, in social amity, which, as it suited her purpose, Catharine was not eager to suspend. Brought up at no great distance from the court of Frederic, the very air of which inspired the love of sciences, and the fine arts, this princess, to the charms of beauty and the advantage of an understanding naturally good, added the enlargement of a well-informed mind, and delivered her sentiments in several languages with facility and elegance of expression.

“Peter was not devoid of understanding, but his education had been much neglected. He possessed an excellent heart, but he had not the manners of a gentleman. He was unusually tall, but ugly and almost deformed. His wife’s superiority often made him blush; and Catherine felt a degree of shame in possessing so unequal a partner: but the last, and that the most affecting, circumstance completed their disunion. He could not make her happy; hence arose that mutual hatred noticed by the court for the rapidity of its growth.”

The caprice of the empress Elizabeth was singularly

displayed towards the unfortunate Peter, on whom she had once so profusely lavished her favours. He was precluded from being present at any political deliberations. A lady of the empress's bed-chamber one day had the temerity to ask Elizabeth, why she excepted the grand duke from all the deliberations of her council? "If you will not give him an opportunity of learning," said she, "what is necessary for a prince to know, what do you think will become of him and the empire?"—"Joanna, do you know where Siberia is?" replied the empress with a frown.

One of the greatest enemies of the grand duke was the great chancellor Bestuscheff. He was unremitted in his exertions to render him hateful in the eyes both of the empress and especially the ladies of the court. The mode he adopted of disseminating his intrigues was curious enough. He wrote his instructions every day upon slips of paper for the use of those ladies in whom he confided, but in so ambiguous a manner, that the notes were unintelligible to any but those in the plot. He then put them in a snuff-box, and under pretence of offering a pinch of snuff, distributed them at pleasure. While Bestuscheff was thus conspiring the ruin of the grand duke, the latter was exposed to the treachery of one in whom he placed unlimited confidence. This was Cyvil Razumoffsky, brother to the field-marshal. He was originally a peasant; but, hearing of the high favour in which his brother was held by the empress, he made his appearance at Petersburg, and through the interest of his brother, soon arrived at the dignity of a count of the empire, and was



made hetman of the Cossacks, and introduced to the acquaintance of Peter. The other conspirators were the young princess Daschkoff, and Maria Taschoglokkoff, lady of honour to the empress.

"The conspirators," says an able writer, "endeavoured to persuade the empress that her nephew was given up to inebriety, long before he had accustomed himself to drink with success, a habit that he contracted doubtless for want of activity, attributable to vexation, and the cowardly suggestions of those who surrounded his person. This is a specimen of their imposition: Maria Taschoglokkoff was discoursing one day with the empress, and perceiving that Elizabeth was not pleased with the grand duke, she complained, with an air of affected sorrow, how unfortunate it was, that a prince so young should addict himself to the habit of drinking! An intimation of this vice, never hinted at before, raised Elizabeth's indignation; she attributed the thought to calumny, and challenged Taschoglokkoff to prove her assertion. 'Nothing is more easy,' replied the impudent woman; 'your majesty's eyes shall satisfy you of the truth.' A few days after, knowing the prince to be indisposed and confined to his room, she paid him a visit, and expressed an inclination to dine with him. Peter acceded to it, and seated her with him at the table. During the repast, Maria assumed a cheerful air, and in a moment of fawning hypocrisy told the prince, she would cure him with a bottle of champaigne. The wine was called for, and the skilful Maria privately slipped into it a pinch of Spanish snuff; and, having pressed the grand duke to drink several bumpers to his aunt's health,

she made him completely intoxicated. The parasitical woman then sent to inform the empress of his situation. Elizabeth came; and, ignorant of the details of the scene that had passed, beheld her sorrowful nephew with emotions of anger. Already too much inclined to admit unfavourable prejudices, after this circumstance she gave full credit to every vice with which this young lady and her accomplices were pleased to saddle him; and falsehood, emboldened by success, made too easy a conquest of her credulous ear."

Peter, having retired to a country house, there he amused himself in his insulated state by dressing his attendants in German uniforms, and teaching them the military exercise after the Prussian system of tactics; at the same time she ordered a large body of soldiers to be garrisoned near his house. Happy would it have been for the grand duke had he confined his recreations to military science or theatrical exhibitions, to which he was greatly attached; those who were placed around his person were instructed to seduce him into the most vulgar habits; he was influenced to become a smoker, a drunkard, and a gamester.

Soltikoff, who filled the office of chamberlain to the grand duke, was a young man as much distinguished for the elegance of his taste and the refinements of his mind, as for the superior graces of his person. He was well acquainted with French literature; the most beautiful pieces of Racine and Voltaire, to which the harmonious tone of his voice seemed to give additional charms, he could repeat without hesitation. "Although scarce emancipated



from infancy, he had secured the favours of the distinguished beauties of the court, and flattery made him proud. It is true, that Soltikoff's valour was doubted among the men; but his conduct on this account was not less tinctured with presumption and temerity in the company of females. At the sight of a naked sword, he might perhaps tremble; but to extend the number of his gallant conquests, he often appeared to brave the deserts of Siberia. To make up his character in a few words, he was regarded by the married men as an enemy, the most seductive and dangerous in the city of Petersburg."

Soltikoff had the presumption even to look with the eye of a gallant on his royal mistress. After many artful manœuvres he succeeded in gaining the affections of Catherine. One day he threw himself at the feet of the princess, and embraced them with unrestrained impetuosity. Catherine, greatly affected, rushed away, and retiring to her closet, thus addressed Soltikoff:—

"Deserve the tears which you have caused to flow."

(See the Tragedy of MITHRIDATES.)

The grand duchess now gave herself up to an unrestrained enjoyment of illicit love. Through the persuasion of Soltikoff, submitted to an operation prescribed by the law of Moses, and the celebrated Dr. Herman Boerhaave assisted at the operation.

The rise of this upstart favourite, and his influence over the grand duchess, at length aroused the indignation of the Russian nobles. The chancellor

Bestucheff represented to the empress that Soltikoff was a favourite, big with perfidy, from whose ambition Russia was threatened with a detestable reign. Elizabeth, irritated at the representation of his infamous conduct, ordered him to repair to Stockholm, as envoy extraordinary to the king of Sweden.— Upon returning home, he was arrested by a courier, who gave him a written order from the empress to reside at Hamburgh, in quality of minister from her court. In fact, Soltikoff was in a state of exile: the grand duchess corresponded with him, until, a new favourite alienated her affections from him. Count Stanislaus Poniatowsky, (afterward king of Poland) when in the bloom of youth, visited Petersburg, in company with the English ambassador. Catharine saw him, and was at once enamoured with him. Elizabeth was informed of the amour, and she ordered Poniatowsky to quit Russia, which was immediately complied with. The chancellor was friendly to Poniatowsky, and wrote to Count de Bruhl, first minister to the king of Poland, acquainting him with the attachment of the archduchess to the young count, in consequence of which Poniatowsky was honoured with the order of the White Eagle, and was sent as plenipotentiary from the king of Poland to the empress of Russia.

The empress now had rendered herself notorious by her irregularities. “ She quitted the enjoyment of moderate pleasures, and depraved her understanding by exceeding the bounds of temperance. Unhappily, with the regular habit of devotional exercises, her taste for voluptuous propensities were not subdued. She prostrated herself whole hours



together before an image that she worshipped and consulted; and by turns passed from bigotry to sensual indulgences, and from debauchery to the altar. She sometimes drank to excess, and then appetite and impatience prevailed over the efforts of her women to undress her. They only basted together the robes which she had put on in the morning, that they might be slipped off in the evening with a pair of scissars; they then put her to bed, where she often recovered her strength in the arms of some new athletic."

The acquaintance of Poniatowsky with Catherine continued disgracefully conspicuous; it was known to all the court. While she was thus engaged in licentious amours, her husband was acting a most ridiculous and absurd part. He ridiculously affected to imitate Frederic the Great, clothed his soldiers in Prussian uniforms, and indulged in habits of excessive inebriation; and, when greatly intoxicated, once exclaimed, That he would conquer the North, and in all things copy Frederic.

Elizabeth, however exceptionable her private conduct, managed the affairs of her empire with great wisdom. She abolished capital punishments, and introduced into all civil and military proceedings a spirit of lenity unknown before. She concluded gloriously a war with Sweden. To support the interest of the house of Austria, she ordered an army of forty thousand men, under general Apraxin, to the assistance of the empress Maria Louisa, and to oppose the designs of the king of Prussia.—Nothing could be more galling to the feelings of the archduke Peter than this expedition, so hostile

to a monarch with whom he was so enraptured. He immediately sent a letter to the chancellor, requesting him to recal the troops. The empress was at this time greatly indisposed, and Bestuscheff, fearful of incurring the displeasure of the presumptive heir to the crown, sent despatches to the Russian general to return home. This measure, added to the known connivance of the chancellor at the connection between Poniatowsky and the grand duchess, hastened his ruin. Peter began to entertain strong suspicions of the incontinence of his wife, and interdicted her presence to Poniatowsky. He waited upon the empress, and acquainted her with all the circumstances which had come to his knowledge; he accused the chancellor of being accessary to his dishonour, and also informed Elizabeth that general Apraxin had been ordered home by the express orders of the chancellor. The empress, enraged at the conduct of her prime minister, immediately commanded him to be placed under arrest. He was brought to trial, found guilty of the crimes alledged against him, and was condemned to lose his head, but the empress remitted the sentence to banishment to Siberia.

Bestuscheff was succeeded in the chancellorship by Count Woronzoff. This change deeply affected the grand duchess; she demanded an interview with Elizabeth, but she was refused. She then sent a letter to M. de l'Hopitel, the French ambassador, to mediate with the empress on her behalf; but this request he politely declined.

Poniatowsky was still in a more perilous situation; he was recalled home to Warsaw, but he could not



support the idea of leaving Catherine. He, therefore, in spite of the orders of the court, remained in disguise, that he might have secret interviews with the duchess. One day, as he was going to her palace, he was discovered, by his insignia of the White Eagle, by one of the grand duke's domestics, who ran to inform the duke. Peter sent for one of the most athletic of his officers, whom he commanded to seize Poniatowsky, and bring him before him. The officer went in pursuit, and soon joined the count, of whom he demanded who he was, and what was his business? Poniatowsky replied, that he was a German tailor, who had come to Oranienbaum, (the palace of the grand duke) to measure an officer for a suit of clothes. "I have orders to take you," said the officer, "before the grand duke."—"I cannot consent to that, I have not time," replied the count. "Oh! whether you have time or not, you shall follow me:" and thus saying, he threw about Poniatowsky's neck a handkerchief, and then dragged him along to the palace.

When Peter saw the count thus led like a common felon before him, he feigned great sorrow at the circumstance, and reprehended the officer for his conduct, but he secretly enjoyed the disgraceful situation in which Poniatowsky was placed, and he viewed that as a sufficient punishment.

To retaliate upon his consort, Peter formed an acquaintance with the youngest daughter of the new chancellor Woronzoff. With this lady he openly cohabited. The empress was every day declining in her health; a reconciliation had been effected between her and Catherine, and the latter

acquired such influence as to incline Elizabeth to indicate great partiality for the grand duchess's son, Paul Petrowitz. The empress was afflicted with a disorder which baffled all the exertions of medical science; it was a bowel complaint. "To relieve her agony, she drank with greater violence. Vain were the remonstrances of her physicians, who endeavoured to convince her, that by so doing she abridged the measure of her existence. Vain the attempts of those friends most attached to her person, to remove strong liquors out of her reach; she persisted in having a case in her chamber, of which she kept the key under her pillow. From that time, they saw her life infallibly approaching its utmost verge. The court intriguers rallied their forces, and divided into opposite factions."

The party of Catherine was headed by count Schuwaloff; another faction, that of the grand duke, was powerfully supported by the senator Woronzoff brother to the chancellor. Catherine had another great adherent to her cause in count Panin, who, from a very low extraction, arose to the highest honours in Russia. This penetrating statesman formed the idea of reuniting the different factions; and, by placing the grand duke on the throne, augment and increase the power of Catherine. Panin acted with the duplicity of a Cromwell; he pretended to treat Catherine with the greatest contempt, and to evidence that he had totally abandoned her cause, he repaired to count Schuwaloff, and thus addressed him. "How," said he, "can you venture with unequal strength to oppose the prince, and by such temerity hurl yourself down a frightful



precipice, a certain death, in order to disposses him of a throne, which the choice of her imperial majesty has conferred upon the legitimate heir, whose birth entitles him to exalted dignity? But admit the possibility that you *could* set aside his succession, can you cherish a hope of obtaining your interest long under a minority, the weakness of which would encourage your rivals, give rise to a crowd of malcontents eager to accelerate your fall? Should you triumph over one conspiracy, can you be assured of similar advantage over another? If the first blow directed against you does not extinguish your power, will not the second level your greatness? The most prudent step that you can take is to support the grand duke; there is still time for that: he is acquainted with the obstacles thrown in his way, and will consider himself happy if, at the price of a partial sacrifice, he can render them no more formidable. Let him then with tranquillity possess the throne; but let him purchase it upon conditions that will dissipate our present fears, and for the future lay the prince under a restraint not to abuse his power. The knowledge of these conditions would be useless now; but should you accede to my advice, I entertain no doubt of the grand duke's willing consent, and you shall have my promise that a plan, conciliating the violence of all parties, shall be immediately suggested."

Schuwaloff was silent, but he sent immediately to the grand duke, requesting to see him on especial business. Peter came; and Schuwaloff, who then was dangerously ill, thus spoke:—"Prince," said he,

"you are not ignorant of the prejudices formed against you. An idea is entertained, that your inclination prefers the German to the Russian interest; the people fear you, the great detest you; all announce a tempestuous reign. Every thing evinces, that, rather than submit to the designs which they suppose you now cherish, a resolution to endure the last extremities. Of what you really meditate, I am ignorant. I know not if you will triumph over the combination formed to crush you, or if that will subdue your opposition; but should you effect what they expect you mean to do—should you, in order to elevate to her place a woman so vile, so despicable as the countess Woronzoff, entertain a thought of divorcing the grand duchess, remember that you will undermine your own happiness, and raise such storms as will involve you in misery; sooner or later you will fall a victim to the troubles that may ensue, and thereby dishonour your reputation for ever."

The grand duke, during this harangue, frequently changed colour. Peter then informed Schuwaloff, that he had never entertained a thought of dissolving his marriage; the charge was base and calumnious. "Romanowna Woronzoff," added the duke, "herself perhaps accredits a report that flatters her vanity. She is an inconsiderate woman; I have promised her marriage, pre-supposing the grand duchess's death, but she is not yet dead." By the manœuvres of Panin, the grand duke and duchess were admitted to the bed-side of the dying princess, who, addressing them jointly, said, "That they had



already partaken of her love, and that she died imploring upon them every benediction."

Panin, having thus successfully carried on his projects, paid a visit to Peter, whose friend he hypocritically pretended to be, whom he harangued in the following terms. "Upon the first step that you take, prince, when you ascend the throne, depends the success of your reign, and the glory that you may merit. To attain the sovereign authority there are two ways: the first is, a proclamation from the army of your accession to the imperial dignity; the second, an acceptance of the crown from the hands of the senate. The former is the readiest, the latter the surest way. The eyes of all Europe, and a great part of Asia, are fixed upon you. Represent then to yourself the glory that you will acquire should the numerous people, subjects of your dominion, and even foreigners themselves, behold an act of generosity, that condescends to wave particular rights, and from the free spontaneous election of the representatives of the nation, accept a crown, for the possession of which your ancestors are indebted to force of arms; and a venal soldiery.

"You are not ignorant of the frequent revolutions experienced in this empire; you know with what facility the troops, seduced from their allegiance or mutinously affected, have either crowned or deposed their sovereigns. To preclude such dangerous experiments, the plan I have proposed stands alone unequalled: elected by the senate, interest will prompt its members to support their

cause; and the people impressed with a proper sense of the respect due to your sacred person, will be ever ready to rally round it for your defence."

While Peter was deliberating upon the proposal of count Panin, two of his counsellors entered the room, and upon his disclosing to them what had passed, they requested him to consult prince Trubetskoi, who was at an advanced age, and had witnessed various revolutions. The prince was sent for. Having made known to him the project of Panin, the old prince replied as follows.

"Prince, you have been advised to pursue a course, not merely dangerous in itself, but completely at variance with the established customs of the empire. The constitution of Russia is entirely military, and the senate has never been able to influence the election of the czar's. Where then is to be found that pretended glory, derived from accepting the crown from a legislative body instead of receiving it from the hands of victorious soldiers? Would the kings of Poland and Sweden, chosen by a diet or senate, urge the same precedent upon the emperor of all the Russias? To reign well is the distinguishing glory of a sovereign. Not anxious about a trifling formality, shew yourself deserving of this glory: disdaining the interference of an ambitious senate, which will soon cause you to repent your misplaced confidence. If unhappily your throne should totter, will or can the senate assist you by its energy and strength. Should you begin your reign by sowing the seeds of discontent in the army, by a contemptuous rejection of antient custom,



of which they are peculiarly jealous, will you not at some period or other, be exposed to their vengeance.

Peter was now halting between two opinions. He at last resolved to consult the grand duchess. To his message Catherine merely returned a blunt and brief answer, "That it was requisite for him to conform to antient custom." Scarcely had the messenger returned home, that news was brought of the death of the empress Elizabeth: she expired January 5, 1762, after a reign of twenty years.

No sooner was Elizabeth's death made public, than a crowd of courtiers assembled at the palace of the grand duke, who received them with great condescension, and also received the oath of allegiance from the officers of his body-guard. The soldiers vehemently shouted, "If you take good care of us, we will serve you with as much fidelity as we did the late good empress." The grand duke immediately was proclaimed emperor, under the title of Peter the Third.

The first acts of this prince indicated a mild and benevolent disposition. He treated all the confidants and favourites of the late empress his aunt. He was kind and conciliatory in his behaviour to his greatest enemies, one of whom, Schuwaloff, he advanced to the dignity of field-marshal. To Catherine he was polite, attentive, and courteous. He passed the chief of his time in her company, and was guided in every thing by her advice and counsels. A vast number of distinguished exiles were recalled from Siberia. Peter repaired to the senate, and there read an edict by which the nobility were

permitted to bear arms, and to travel out of the Russian dominions as they pleased. They were also freed from the vassalage in which their ancestors had lived. All these auspicious circumstances served only to cast a dark shade over the character of Peter, when, in a very short time, he was found to neglect the concerns of government, and abandon himself to revelry and debauchery. The aide-de-camp general to Peter, was high in his favour and confidence: his name was Goudowitsch. Peter had for five days successively been rioting with his mistresses and libidinous courtiers; and, in the midst of his Sardanapalian excesses, Goudowitsch entered, and, with a rigid, and severe countenance, he thus addressed his sovereign:

“Czar, I perceive that to us, who are your friends, you prefer the enemies of your glory. You are zealously attached to them, are liberal in the services you render them. You seem willing to justify those reports, that you were more envious of vulgar and disgraceful sensualities, than deserving the government of a great empire.

“Is it thus, sire, that you copy after the example of your illustrious grandfather, Peter the Great, whom you have so repeatedly declared you had taken for your model? Is this your perseverance in that noble and wise conduct, which, at your accession, meritoriously captivated the love, and fixed for a time the affections of your people? But that love and that admiration have already vanished; nothing now is heard but murmurs, and the language of discontent. Petersburg demands whether its czar ceases to live within its walls? The whole



empire trembles, lest the expectation of laws which might reanimate its vigour should prove vain and abortive. The wicked alone triumph, and intrigues and cabals are prevalent every where. Rise then, O czar! rise from your lethargy! Hasten to demonstrate, by some splendid act of virtue, that you are worthy to realize the expectations which, on your coming to the crown, you raised in the breasts of your subjects."

Abashed and terrified at the language of Goudowitsch, Peter replied, "Tell me what I can do to recompense the empire for those days I have spent in debauchery?" At that moment Goudowitsch presented the two declarations, of which one contained privileges granted to the nobility, and the other for abolishing the privy chancery. Peter put the papers under his arm, and went to read them before the senate, who concluded that he had been five days employed in digesting those subjects.

Notwithstanding the late dereliction from his public duty, the czar evidently profited by the animated harangue of his aid-de-camp general. He undertook the reformation of various abuses in courts of jurisprudence, and he encouraged commerce, the arts, and the sciences. He still maintained his predilection for Prussia, and corresponded, but in a very servile manner, with Frederic: the latter, in consequence of the czar's urgent request, made the emperor of all the Russias a major-general in his army! Peter was attached to the Lutheran religion, and treated the national faith of his country with glaring disrespect. He pillaged

the churches of the images of the saints, so dear to the Russians. He caused the archbishop of Novogorod to be banished for remonstrating against his innovations. His conduct was equally offensive to the army: he introduced the Prussian exercise, placed German officers over the Russian soldiers, and made other arrangements equally impolitic. Mr. Coxe affirms, that such was the ridiculous homage he paid to Frederic the Great, that he used publicly to call him master. "Talking with one of his favourites, he said, You know I have been a faithful servant to my *master*; for you remember that I transmitted to him intelligence of all the secrets of the cabinet." (*Coxe's Travels*, vol. iii. p. 14.)

The czar for some time treated Catherine with great external respect; but of a sudden he reversed his behaviour, and not unfrequently publicly insulted her. Catherine knew well how to profit by this impolitic conduct. "Well instructed for some years in the art of dissimulation, she found no difficulty in assuming before the eyes of the multitude, appearances most repugnant to her feelings. The pupil of philosophers became a bigot, went daily to the churches in Petersburg, offered up prayers with all the affectation of ardent zeal, forced upon herself the most superstitious rites of the Greek church, accosted the poor with benevolence, and treated the parish clergy with a respect that did not fail to travel from house to house, and accumulate her praise." *Howl come! dogu. tobacowen p. 14.*

Whilst Catherine was acting this politic part, the czar, her husband, was plunging himself into an abyss of the most disgraceful licentiousness. He



stooped so low as to live familiarly with buffoons, and admit them to his table.

One evening, after the play, he promiscuously invited the actors, male and female, to sup with the ladies and grandees of his court, and he placed a dancer by his side, whom he called his *little wife*.

The influence of Romanowna Woronzoff over this deluded and infatuated monarch every day was increasing. "It is a well known fact," says that judicious writer and enlightened traveller, the Rev. Mr. Coxe, that "he more than once avowed an intention of arresting Catherine and her son, (afterward Paul the First) whom he proposed to exclude from the succession, and of marrying Elizabeth, countess of Woronzoff, his mistress. This alarming measure was scarcely adopted before it was immediately conveyed to Catherine, through the imprudence of the countess." (*Coxe's Travels*, vol. iii. p. 19.)

The countess of Woronzoff had been apprized of the empress's amours with Soltikoff, and it was upon that basis that Peter determined to pronounce his son Paul Petrovitz illegitimate, and to prevent him from succeeding to the throne. He then sent to Hamburg for Soltikoff; and upon his arrival at Petersburg, he lavished upon him a profusion of favours and benefits. The motive was self-evident; it was to obtain from him proofs of the guilt of Catherine. Resolved to disinherit his son Paul, he fixed his choice for a successor upon prince Iwan, who was dethroned by Elizabeth. That prince was in the fortress of Schlusseburg; thither Peter repaired, but in disguise, having decorated one of his attendants

as the emperor. Iwan recognised the czar, and throwing himself at his feet, exclaimed—"Czar, here you are the master. I will not importune you with a long petition, but do soften the rigour of my lot. For many years have I groaned in the darkness of this prison; the only favour I ask is a permission occasionally to breathe a purer air." The czar replied, "Rise, Iwan, (lightly tapping him on the shoulder) be not uncomfortable, for the future I will make use of all the means I possess to render your confinement less severe: but tell me, prince, do you retain a recollection of all the misfortunes that you have endured from your early childhood?"—"I have not even a faint idea," said Iwan, "of those which assailed my infancy; but from the moment in which I began to feel misery my tears have not ceased to mingle with those of my father and mother, who were unhappy but on my account; and the greatest pain that I endured, proceeded from the cruel treatment they experienced when we were transported from one fortress to another."—"Ah! from whom did you experience that cruel treatment," demanded the czar. "From the officers who conducted us," said Iwan, "the most inhuman of beings."—"Can you recollect the names of those officers?"—"Alas!" rejoined Iwan, "we were not curious to learn their names; we contented ourselves with rendering thanks to heaven upon our knees, when such monsters were relieved by less ferocious characters."—"What!" exclaimed the emperor, "did you never meet with humane persons?"—"One only amongst this troop of tigers deserved exception," said Iwan. "He won our affections, and assuaged our sorrows."



His repeated goodness, his generous attentions, have impressed upon my memory such lively marks of gratitude as never—no never, can be erased.”—“And are you also ignorant of that brave man’s name,” said the czar, greatly affected. “Oh, no!” replied the exile, “I well remember it; it was Korff.”

The Baron de Korff, mentioned by Iwan, was among the attendants of Peter. He heard the eulogium passed upon him, and burst into tears: the czar did the same; and, taking Korff by the arm, said in broken accents, “Baron, see that a good action is never lost.” The czar retired, and left Iwan in company with the baron of Ungein Sternberg. “How came you here, prince?” cried the baron. “Who can sufficiently guard against the Rasboiniks, the banditties?” replied Iwan. “One day, an order, from I know not who, came to the prison in which I was confined with my parents. The banditti rushed into the middle of our family, and tore me from the only persons I knew in the world, who alone had engrossed all my affection, and possessed all my confidence; tore me from my father, my mother, my brothers, and my sisters. Oh! what streams of tears have flowed from these eyes; oh! how have I lamented their loss: and what pangs must harrow up their souls if they are yet alive. How must they deplore the loss of a son, and of a brother!”—“What are your ideas as to the probable fate of our new czar?” enquired the baron. “If I may judge by the idea I have formed of the Russians, his fate will not be more fortunate than mine has been. My father and mother have

often told me, that foreign princes will always incur hatred, and at last be dethroned by the perfidious and proud Russian."

Catherine had now fixed her affections upon Count Gregory Orloff, who had risen to his present elevated situation from being a subaltern in the army. With this favourite the empress concerted a plan for annihilating the authority of the czar. The princess Daschkoff daughter of the senator Woronzow, and sister of the mistress of Peter, was the life and soul of the conspiracy. "Jealous of her sister's glory, neither the threats of that sister, heightened by her father's sanction, nor the authority of the chancellor, her uncle, in whose house she had been brought up, could detach her from a party, in taking the chief direction in which her vanity was gratified.

"During her residence at Moscow, she had studied the languages, and perused many foreign publications. Her ambition by these acquisitions was still more fired, and induced a contempt of that ignorance so prevalent in her own nation. In fine, she thought herself capable of heading the conspiracy; she therefore haughtily braved the displeasure of her family, and with the same spirit would have braved death itself." (*Life of Catherine the Second*, vol. i. p. 143.)

Daschkoff had in her service a native of Piedmont, whose name was Odart. She introduced him to Catherine, who appointed him her private secretary, a place of considerable confidence, and well adapted for a man of so intriguing a disposition. The chief conspirators, the empress, the princess Daschkoff, and Odart, began now their criminal operations:



their first object was to gain the military over to their side; for attaining this primary object, they fixed upon the Hetman Razumoffsky and Count Panin. The Hetman assembled his friends together, and told them, that a plot was forming for dethroning the emperor. The persons to whom he addressed, requested to know what they were to do. "When the conspiracy breaks out, second my exertions," replied Razumoffsky, "and I will put you in possession of that rank to which you are entitled by birth and talents. The blind intrepidity of some obscure persons will strike the first blow. Let us, my friends, mark the moment of enterprize: should they succeed, our ingenuity must profit by their seditious movements. Are you disposed to follow my example?" They all unanimously answered in the affirmative.

Prince Wolkonsky, major-general of the guards, and the archbishop of Novogorod were easily gained over. It may be recollected, that this dignified ecclesiastic had a supreme aversion to Peter, on account of the innovations he had made in the established religion; he had also been exiled, but afterward recalled by the czar. Another active agent was also engaged in this plot, namely Gleboff, solicitor-general to the senate, who had received innumerable favours from his royal master. It was agreed that Peter the Third should be deposed; but the great question to be discussed was, How such an event was to be effected? Here the conspirators differed. Orloff, Panin, and Razumoffsky, were of opinion, that the czar should be arrested at Petersburg, during the celebration of St. Peter's

festival. Lieutenant Passick declared, that the emperor ought to be assassinated in the midst of his court; and so determined was this sanguinary wretch, that, in spite of the remonstrances of his accomplices, he went, in company with another conspirator, and laid wait during two days in hopes of dispatching the emperor; but, happily, Peter eluded the deadly blow of the assassin.

At a meeting of the conspirators count Panin addressed the empress in the following energetic language:

"I know, madam, the summit of your wishes, and the extent of your power: but I know also the point at which your ambition should stop. When you were grand duchess you repeated a hundred times, that your wishes would be amply gratified with the appellation of 'The emperor's mother.' What! is not that title sufficiently splendid? You now aspire to the throne of Russia, to the exclusion of your son. By what right do you claim the sole sovereignty of the empire? Are you descended from the blood of the czars? Was you even born in their dominions? Do you suppose for a moment that the antient and warlike nation of Muscovy will acknowledge a countess of Anhalt for its sovereign? Does it not forcibly press upon your mind, that the nation will ever cherish a pre-eminent veneration for the descendants of Peter the Great? Ah! madam, cease to demand more than you have power to retain. Reflect, that the only means of justifying your rash enterprise is, to appear less concerned about your own, than anxious to promote your son's interest."



This speech of count Panin electrified the whole assembly. A dead silence prevailed ; while a visible agitation pervaded the conspirators. At length the empress thus replied :

“ Your arguments, count, are very forcible, but they fail of convincing me. I know, and am persuaded, you will agree with me in the assertion, that, provided the Russians are governed, it is a matter of indifference to them from whence their princes derive their origin. This nation knows nothing but obedience to the constituted supreme authority ; Menzikoff, Biren, and Munich, furnish proofs of this. It is not upon such principles that I would reign ; but, on the contrary, with clemency, with justice, and in a manner that should exclude even the slightest pretext for murmur or dissatisfaction. But you, who talk of murmurs and seditions, can you forget that they are more frequent under regencies ? Should we ourselves have engaged in the present business had Peter the Third been capable of holding the reins of government ? You are alarmed about my son ; but would you rather abandon him to a capricious father, by whom he is disavowed, than confide him to a mother, who cherishes him with fond affection ? Admitting, that ambition prompts me to aim at supreme power, is it not to afford me the opportunity of remunerating those who have rendered me services ? Yes, doubtless they may confide in my grateful recollection of their attachment to me ; but I cannot confer favours, if I have not the sphere of ability to confer them—that power and that ability I request of you.”

Panin did not yield his opinion in consequence of this harangue of Catherine, and the conspirators went away divided in their opinions. The inflexibility of Panin, which withstood the eloquence and logic of his royal mistress, and the unwearied efforts of Orloff, Odart, and the princess Daschkoff, was softened at length by listening to the voice of love. The princess was young, and very beautiful, her intellectual powers were of a superior order. Odart was the agent who carried on the amour: Panin was rendered happy; and the empress had no one now to thwart the projects of her ambition.

Peter was at this time engaged in equipping a fleet which was to commence hostilities against Denmark; one division was at Cronstadt, the other at Raval. The military force were already assembled in Pomerania, and the czar was himself preparing to head his army to invade Holstein. He had fixed upon the day following, the festival of St. Peter, for his departure, which he proposed celebrating at Peterhoff, and he had determined, prior to his departure, to arrest the empress. There were not wanting persons who watched every motion of the czar, and were privy to all his designs. Peter had retired to his palace at Oranienbaum, to which he had invited the most beautiful ladies of the court. The conspiracy was developed by a soldier of the royal guards, who inadvertently presuming his captain was in the secret, interrogated him as to the day in which they were to take up arms against the emperor. The captain made a report, and Passick, who was a lieutenant in this regiment, was instantly seized.



He had sufficient time, while under arrest, to write with a pencil on a scrap of paper—"Strike immediately, or we are ruined." The person entrusted with this note delivered it to the princess Daschkoff, she gave it to Panin, proposing an immediate execution of their plan. Panin, however, disapproved of that idea, and, affirming that it was requisite to delay it until the morrow, he departed.

No sooner was the count gone, than the princess dressed herself in male attire, and went to meet Orloff and his accomplices upon the Green Bridge, which was the appointed place of rendezvous. Catherine had left the palace and taken up her residence in a pavilion, near which flowed a canal, which communicated with the river Neva; a boat was stationed on the canal, in case of necessity, to convey her from Russia.

Catherine laid herself down to rest, and was in a profound sleep, when a sudden noise awakened her, and she perceived a soldier by her side, who presented her with a note from the princess Daschkoff. (The key of the pavilion was given to him to let himself in.) The note was as follows:

"Your majesty has not a moment to lose: prepare to follow me."

The soldier instantly disappeared. The empress called her female attendant, Iwanoffna; they dressed themselves without loss of time. At this moment the soldier returned, and informed the empress, that a carriage was waiting for her at the garden gate. She stepped into it, and Orloff officiated as driver.

Some obstructions arising in the journey, Catherine alighted, and proceeded some way on foot, when they met with a peasant's cart. Orloff stopped it, and the empress entered it, the party now drove on, when the noise of a carriage was distinctly heard as coming forward with great rapidity. It was the carriage of count Orloff, whose brother was in the cart with the empress, who, preceded by the count, speedily reached the capital.

Catherine hastened to the place where a body of troops were stationed, whom she had bribed from their allegiance. As soon as she arrived, which was in the night, thirty of those soldiers rushed out, nearly naked, and saluted her with loud acclamations. Astonished at the paucity of the number, she began to tremble for the consequence, and addressed them thus :

Soldiers! Forced by danger, I have recourse to you for protection. The czar proposes this night the destruction of myself and son. I could not escape death but by flight. In committing my person to your care ; I rely upon your fidelity."

The military declared they would die in the empress's defence. The Hetman Razumoffsky now made his appearance ; the soldiers were all summoned together, and they acknowledged Catherine as their sovereign, shouting out " Long live the empress." Catherine was now surrounded by two thousand armed men, besides a vast number of the inhabitants of Petersburg. She then went with a vast retinue, amidst the acclamations of an immense number of spectators, to the church of Cason, where she was met by the archbishop of Novogorod



in his archiepiscopal robes, with a multitude of the clergy. They all attended the empress to the altar, where the imperial crown was placed upon her head, and she was proclaimed sovereign of all the Russias, under the title of Catherine the Second, and she at the same time declared her son Paul Petrovitz her successor. She returned to her palace, where she received the homage of her new subjects.

Prince George of Holstein, uncle to Peter, made an effort in favour of his royal relative, which proved inefficient, and he was seized and committed to prison. No sooner was the czar apprized of this sudden revolution, than he sent a message to the different branches of his army, commanding them to return to their allegiance; but the whole body of the military declared, that they did not own him as their sovereign.

The empress now issued the following manifesto, a copy of which was sent to each of the foreign ministers :

“ We, Catherine II. empress of all the Russias, to our faithful subjects :

“ All true patriots have but too well known the danger that threatened the Russian empire. In the first place, our orthodox religion was shaken, the canons of the Greek church reversed, and we looked forward to the last misfortune—that of beholding the orthodoxy of our faith, antiently established in Russia, superceded by the introduction of foreign tenets. In the second place, the glory of Russia, raised by her victorious arms, and at the price of

her blood, to the summit of admiration, was upon the point of falling a sacrifice to its enemies by a peace recently concluded ; whilst the interior arrangements of the empire, on which the happiness of our dear country depends, were trodden under foot.

“ Affected by the danger of our subjects, and above all incapable of refusing their sincere and unanimous prayers, we have ascended our imperial throne of Russia.”

After this state paper had been published, the empress, who was extremely beloved by the soldiers, dressed in the uniform of the guards, rode through all the ranks of the army, attended by the princess Daschkoff, who was also in regimentals. The celebrated Potemkin was at this time a cornet of horse in the army, he was in the bloom of youth, being only sixteen years of age, perceiving the empress's sword without a knot, he presented Catherine with his own sword-knot. The soldiers, who were plentifully supplied with spirituous liquors, cheered her majesty as she went along, tossing their caps into the air. One regiment, however, dissented from their comrades, and refused to applaud the empress: the officers were put under arrest.

Peter as yet seemed to apprehend no danger ; attended by his mistress Woronzoff, and a cavalcade of ladies, he set off in an open chariot for Peterhoff, there to celebrate the festival of St. Peter. The carriages were proceeding on rapidly, when Goudowitsch, the czar's aid-de-camp general, who was dispatched before the czar, was perceived galloping



back full speed ; he had met with one of the empress's chamberlains, who informed him of some particulars relative to the revolution. Goudowitsch, approaching the imperial carriage, ordered the driver to stop : the czar, astonished, asked Goudowitsch if he was mad. The latter advanced, and whispered a few words in the ear of the emperor, who alighted, and walking a few paces entered into more particular conversation with the aid-de-camp. He then desired the ladies to alight, and pointed out to them a path which would lead them to Peterhoff, while he and his nobles drove on furiously to that place.

Upon the emperor's arrival at his palace, he interrogated the domestics as to the escape of the empress ; he himself went into all the rooms, opened the closets, and even peeped under the beds, to see if she was any where concealed. When the countess of Woronzoff entered, Peter thus accosted her—"Romanowna, will you believe it now ? Catherine has escaped. I told you she was capable of any thing." Scarcely had his lips uttered these words, than a peasant entered, and delivered a letter into the hands of the czar. This announced the revolution which had taken place at Petersburg, and the crowning of the empress Catherine. Peter read it aloud to those around him. Woronzoff the chancellor endeavoured to calm the perturbed state of the emperor's mind, and guaranteed, that if the czar would immediately depart for the capital, he had little doubt of bringing the empress back to her duty. Peter acceded to this proposal ; as he entered the palace, he beheld the empress surrounded

by a multitude of people swearing allegiance to her. Addressing her, he said, "Madam, you may succeed for a time, but that cannot be of long duration: ought you to pride yourself upon the blind zeal of your imprudent friends? Is it consistent merely for a temporary possession of an empire to make your husband an irreconcilable enemy? Why take up arms against him, from whom you may obtain every thing by softness of persuasion, and the ascendancy of your cultivated mind? Know, then, that the regiments of guards do not compose the whole of the czar's forces, and that the inhabitants of Petersburg make but a feeble part of the Russian empire."

Catherine replied, "You see it is not I who act; I do but yield to the ardent desires of the people." Woronzoff, who so proudly boasted of his fidelity, and of bringing the empress back to her duty, immediately took the oath of allegiance to Catherine. "I will serve you," Madam, said he, "at your counsels, but I am useless in the field. My presence may displease those who have now heard me; but not to give them umbrage, I supplicate your majesty's leave to remain in my house under the guard of a confidential officer." This request was granted.

In the evening of the day on which Peter had arrived at Petersburg, the empress mounted her horse, and carrying in her hand a naked sword, with a wreath of oak around her brow, and placed herself at the head of her army. She had on her right hand the princess Daschkoff, on the left was the Hetman Razumoffsky; she was joined by three



thousand Cossacks, troops which the czar had sent into Pomerania, but who had returned home in consequence of the revolution.

The emperor was in a state of pitiable suffering: "Every moment brought fresh intelligence of the progress of the revolution. He could no longer doubt it. Surrounded by females bathed in tears, and young courtiers incapable of assisting by advice, he wandered about the walks of Peterhoff, forming twenty different resolutions, and executing none; sometimes breaking forth into violent imprecations against the empress, at others dictating useless manifestos.

"But impending danger stared him in the face. He sent orders for three thousand Holstein soldiers, which he had left at Oranienbaum, to join him without delay. It was then the old marshal of Munich presented himself.

"Munich, respected by the emperor for his great military reputation, but whose affections he had almost alienated by forcing him to adopt the new Prussian exercise. Munich alone could give his master salutary advice, and that he did give him: 'Czar,' said the old warrior, 'your troops arrive; let us put ourselves at their head, and march direct to Petersburg, there you still have friends. As soon as you appear, all will arm in your defence. Most part of the guards have only been led astray, and will return to your standard. If at last it is necessary to try our force, be assured that rebels will not long dispute the victory.'

"This resolution captivated the czar, but it was displeasing to his timid courtiers; and whilst they

were preparing to march, news arrived of the empress's approach with a force, as it was said, of twenty thousand men. The women immediately cried out, that it was most prudent to return to Oranienbaum. The emperor himself seemed inclined not to expose his person: 'Well,' said Munich, 'If you are afraid of fighting rebels, do not wait for them, at least in a place where you cannot defend yourself with advantage. Neither Oranienbaum nor Peterhoff are capable of sustaining a siege, but Cronstadt offers you an asylum. Cronstadt is yet under your commands: you will find there a formidable fleet, and a numerous garrison. It is from thence you may oblige Petersburg to return to obedience.' This advice met with unanimous applause. General Liewers was dispatched immediately to take the command of Cronstadt; and two yachts were scarcely prepared for the czar's departure, before an officer came to assure him to rely upon the fidelity of that fortress. The czar, who thought he saw Catherine already at the gates of Peterhoff, precipitately embarked, followed by his miserable court and the intrepid Munich.

"Unpropitious fatality seemed to attend Peter's most prudent measures. A few hours changed the face of things at Cronstadt. Revolt already seized the fleet and garrison that had welcomed general Liewers with transports of joy, and sworn to retain allegiance to the emperor. Liewers from his command succeeded to a prison, and this rapid change was effected by a Russian.

"At the first onset of the revolution, among the schemes adopted to ensure success, not one of the



conspirators thought of the port of Cronstadt. It was not until the afternoon that any person, reflecting on the importance of this place, perceived their forgetful negligence. Admiral Talitzan offered to make himself master of it. The proposal was accepted. He embarked in his ship's boat, and expressly forbid his bargemen to tell from whence they came, and he arrived at Cronstadt. General Lievers, who was upon the look-out in momentary expectation of the emperor himself, ran to meet Talitzan, and endeavoured with much ingenuity to discover if his inclinations favoured Catherine; but Talitzan, still more artful than his opponent, pretended ignorance of the effects produced by the revolt; and said, that, being at his country-seat, he had received confused intimations of tumults at Petersburg, and hastened to the fleet, where his duty called him. Lievers believed and quitted him. Talitzan immediately repaired to the sailors' barracks, harangued them, and gave information of the empress's success: he advised them to aid her majesty as most consistent with their interest and duty; and he distributed money and spirits to bribe them to arrest the governor. A few soldiers joined the sailors: Lievers was immediately put in prison, and Talitzan, in the name of Catherine, took the supreme command of a place, the possession of which would have saved the czar, or at least would have furnished the means of holding out for some time." (*Life of Catherine II.* vol. i. p. 177—180.)

Just after this unfortunate event, the czar arrived at Cronstadt; a part of the garrison under arms were drawn out upon the shore as soon as the first

yacht cast anchor, the centinel cried—"Who's there?"—"The emperor!" was the answer. "There is no emperor now," rejoined the centinel. Peter arose, and throwing open his cloak, discovered the insignia of his order: "What!" he exclaimed, "do you not know me?"—"No," cried a multitude of voices, "we no longer acknowledge the emperor. Long live the empress Catherine!" Talitzan then threatened to sink the yacht to the bottom if it was not steered off immediately. The czar was for withdrawing the vessel, when Goudowitsch, seizing one of the balustrades which surrounded the port, cried out, "Put your hand on the side of mine, let us leap to the ground; no one will dare to fire upon you, and Cronstadt will be in your majesty's hands." This advice was seconded by marshal Munich: Peter would not agree to it; the cable was split, and the yacht was rowed off with the utmost speed.

"The night was exceedingly fine; Munich and Goudowitsch, seated upon the deck, contemplated in mournful silence the starry canopy glittering over their heads, and the calm but solemn stillness of the waves around them. The pilot waited upon the czar in the cabin for his instructions. Peter sent for Munich, and thus addressed him:

"Field-marshal, I feel an inclination, but perhaps too late, to follow your advice; but you see the extremity to which I am reduced. You, who have escaped from so many perils, can inform me what I ought to do."—"Go, and immediately join the squadron lying at Reval," said Munich; "take a vessel, depart for Pomerania, put yourself at the



head of your army, enter again into Russia, and rely on my promise, that in six weeks, Petersburg and the rest of the empire shall submit to your authority."

The ladies, whose influence was greater than that of the field-marshal over the czar, declared that the strength of the rowers would be exhausted ere they reached Reval. "Well then," replied Munich, "we will all row with them." This proposal was rejected, and the infatuated monarch ordered the pilot to steer the yacht to Oranienbaum, where, as soon as he arrived, he privately sent a letter to the empress. Some of his Holstein guards, who were stationed at this place, gave him the most interesting and unequivocal marks of loyalty and affection. They besought him to lead them against the empress's army, at the same time protesting that they were to a man ready to sacrifice their lives in his service.

Munich once more endeavoured to rouse his sovereign to action. "Come," said he, "march against the rebels; I will go before you, and their swords shall not reach you, till they have pierced my body." But Peter rejected this advice also. The empress was on her march, and arrived at Krasnoe-Kabac, eight wersts from Petersburg, where she reposed. She from thence proceeded to the monastery of St. Sergius, near Strelna, where she made a second halt. It was there she received a letter from her husband, written in the most abject terms, acknowledging his misconduct, and making a proposition to share the sovereign authority with her. The empress would not deign to give an

answer, or even suffer the messenger who brought it to return back to his master. Upon receiving tidings of the near approach of Catherine, the czar ordered a horse to be saddled for the purpose of escaping into Poland; but wavering and irresolute, changed his mind, and immediately gave orders for dismantling the fortress at Oranienbaum, for the purpose of convincing the empress that he did not mean to make any resistance, which idea he fully communicated to her in a second letter still more abject than the first. He assured her, that he would resign the crown; and only requested liberty to retire into Holstein. Catherine returned no answer to this letter, but informed the chamberlain Ismailoff, that his master must submit unconditionally to her will and pleasure. Ismailoff advised Peter to dismiss his troops, amounting to six hundred men, and wait upon the empress, assuring him that he would be well received; and would obtain of her all that he wished. The czar was dubious what course to pursue, when Ismailoff, with a dextrous manœuvre of treachery, exclaimed, "Czar, delay not a moment; if you do your life will be in danger." This determined Peter to follow the pernicious counsel which had been given to him; a carriage was in readiness, the czar entered it, accompanied by the traitor Ismailoff, Romanowna Woronzoff, Goudovitch, and they all drove off for Petersburg.

Arrived at the imperial palace, Romanowna, his mistress, was instantly seized by the military, who tore off the ribbon with which she had been invested by Peter, which was immediately presented to her sister the princess Daschkoff. The czar was led



up the grand staircase, where the attendants stripped him of his imperial badges of distinction : they took off his clothes, and ransacked his pockets of diamonds and jewels. " After having remained there some time in his shirt, and barefoot, a butt to the outrages of the soldiery, they threw over him an old morning gown, and shut him up alone in a room, with a guard at the door.

" Count Panin, being sent by the empress to the czar, had a long conference with him. He told him, that her majesty would not long keep him in confinement, but send him into Holstein, according to his own request. To this promise, he added several others, probably without the design of keeping any. He concluded his visit by making him write and sign the following declaration :—

" During the short space of my absolute reign over the empire of Russia, I became sensible, that I was not able to support so great a burden, and that my abilities were not equal to the task of governing so great an empire, either as a sovereign, or in any other capacity whatever. I also foresaw the great troubles which must from thence have arisen, and have been followed with the total ruin of the empire, and covered me with eternal disgrace. After having, therefore, seriously reflected thereon, I declare without constraint, and in the most solemn manner, to the Russian empire and to the whole universe, that I for ever renounce the government of the said empire, never desiring hereafter to reign therein, either as an absolute sovereign, or under any other form of government ; never wishing to

aspire thereto, to use any means of any sort, for that purpose. As a pledge of which I swear sincerely before God and all the world, to this present renunciation, written and signed this 29th of June, O. S. 1762." Immediately as Peter had signed his name to this fatal paper, Panin departed.

The unfortunate czar had now become the architect of his own destruction; his abdication of the throne was the prelude to the termination of his earthly existence. The very evening of the day in which he had placed his hand to the paper of renunciation, he was conveyed as a prisoner to Ropscha, a small imperial palace, twenty wersts from Petersburg.

Elevated to the sole sovereign authority of the empire of Russia, Catherine received at her levee the homage and congratulations of the nobility, among whom was the venerable field-marshal Munich. Perceiving him, the empress called aloud to him, saying, "Field-marshal, it was you, then, who wanted to fight against me."—"Yes, madam," replied Munich; "could I do less for the prince who delivered me from captivity? But it is henceforward my duty to fight for you; and you will find in me a fidelity equal to that with which I had devoted my services to him."

The emperor Peter the Third had been only six days at the palace of Ropscha, when he received a visit from Alexis Orloff, in company with an officer named Teploff, who congratulated the royal prisoner on the prospect of his speedy release from captivity. Previous to the hour of dinner, to which they were both invited, brandy was placed on the



table; and, while Teploff engaged Peter in some trifling conversation, Orloff seized an opportunity of pouring a poisonous mixture into the glass of the czar. Peter, unconscious of the horrid design, drank the deadly potion, which was so powerful as to produce effects which justly alarmed the unfortunate prince. He was offered a second glass, under the pretence of its ameliorating his pains; but, suspecting he had swallowed poison, he resisted with indignant feelings the vile offer. He then called aloud for some milk to be brought to him; but the murderers again pressed him to drink the contents of the glass they had offered him. At this moment, a favourite domestic of the czar, a Frenchman, came running into the room; Peter threw himself into his arms, exclaiming in a faint tone of voice, "Is it not enough to prevent me from reigning in Sweden, and to deprive me of the crown of Russia—but must I also be put to death?" The servant in vain attempted to intercede for his royal master, but he was forcibly turned out of the room. Instantly the young prince Baratinsky came in, and joined the miscreants. Orloff, in consequence of the emperor's refusal to take the second draught of poison, had thrown him down on the floor, and was pressing upon his breast with both his knees, and firmly griping his throat with his hand. The monarch now struggled with that strength which arises from despair. The other assassins then threw a napkin round his neck, and succeeded in putting an end to his life by suffocation. This tragical event took place on July 17, 1762.

"Such is the account," says the author of the life of the empress Catherine II. "of the death of Peter III. as circulated in whispers at Petersburg, and which indeed has never been contradicted. Whether it be the real manner in which the czar came by his death, is, after all, known only to that Being to whom the heart is open, and from whom no secrets are concealed. The partisans that might have retained their attachment to him after his fall—the murmurs of the populace, who quietly permit revolutions to be effected, and afterwards lament those who have fallen their victims—the difficulties arising from keeping in custody a prisoner of such consequence—all these motives in conjunction tend to give credit to the opinion, that some hand of uncontrollable authority shortened his days. But the conduct of the empress before that event, and especially for four and thirty years that she afterwards reigned, is of itself alone a sufficient refutation of so atrocious a calumny as would fix the guilt of it on her."

Much as this able writer has endeavoured to rescue the character of Catherine from what he designates a "*calumny*," certain it is, that her conduct upon the accession of her husband to the period of his forced abdication, was very equivocal, and evidence an ambition which was not likely to be restrained within any limits by the power of conscience.

The author we have just quoted gives a masterly sketch of the character of Peter the Third. "Whatever were the failings and errors of Peter III. it is not here intended to extenuate or defend them,



though certainly they were too cruelly punished. Neither ought the good he did to be passed over in silence: his two ukases for abolishing the secret inquisition, and for giving liberty to the nobles, must for ever secure to this prince the grateful acknowledgments of Russia. The *clement* Elizabeth had left in subsistence a tribunal, before which the first persons of the empire on the bare deposition of a villain on the way to execution, were delivered and put to the torture for extorting the confession of imaginary crimes. Peter III. was dethroned; his name was never honoured with so flattering an epithet; and he suppressed that tribunal. This prince was kind, humane, and beloved: of all who composed his more intimate circle, this is asserted on the affirmation of many Russians who were attached to his person. He recalled all the exiles that were lingering out their lives in Siberia, excepting Bestucheff; and it must have been a spectacle curious enough to see Biren and Munich together; the former embarrassed, confounded, not daring to lift up his eyes, dreading to meet those of the son or brother of some unfortunate wretch who had been assassinated or banished by his command: Munich, on the other hand, forming the most perfect contrast with him. Fourscore years of his life elapsed, twenty of them passed in exile in the frightful wastes of Siberia, had not depressed that firm and generous man. At the head of armies, condemned to death, in frozen deserts, recalled to court, and reinstated in all his employments, Munich was every where the same; he never preserved that unalterable serenity, that energy of character,

which falls to the lot of so very few persons.

“ Had the emperor, during the six months of his reign, done no more than issue those two decrees just mentioned, he would have been entitled to rank with those sovereigns who lay a just claim to the gratitude of their subjects. The freedom of the nobility is undoubtedly the first step to civilization ; that indispensable preliminary had escaped the attention of Peter the Great : it was by this that he ought to have begun his work ; and it is to be regretted, that the Russian legislator failed of perceiving the absolute necessity of it. The seizure of the possessions of the church was one of the causes of the public discontent ; but what shews that the act was far from being bad in itself, is, that the empress never thought it expedient to restore them. The odium did not fall upon her ; the fault being committed, she had the address to profit by it.” (*Life of the Empress Catherine II.* vol. i. page 300—303.)

A late acute writer, Mr. Eton, passes the following eulogium on the czar Peter the Third :

“ He was a victim to the undesigning openness and integrity of his heart ; a prince, whose answer to the precautions which were recommended to him by the king of Prussia was, ‘ I do good to all the world, and with that what have I to fear ? ’ a prince, who was the benefactor of his country, and whose laws (those very laws which were brought in accusation against him as crimes) have been religiously observed as models of wisdom and humanity, and without which the reign of the empress would have



been less glorious, and her people less happy." Speaking of the murder of this monarch, the same writer thus expresses himself; "Many powerful interests were combined to bury in oblivion this horrid event; but let sovereigns and individuals learn, that TRUTH WILL ONE DAY APPEAR." (*Eton's Survey of the Turkish Empire*, p. 445.)

After the murder of this unfortunate emperor, the monster who had been most conspicuous in this vile transaction, Alexis Orloff, immediately mounted his horse, and rode full speed to acquaint Catherine with the circumstance. The empress was at that moment about to make her appearance at court. She immediately held a council, in which it was determined, that the death of Peter should not be made known until the day following. Catherine dined in public, as usual, and in the evening held a court.

On the day appointed, the death of the emperor was publicly announced at the dinner-hour of the empress, with a dissimulation admirably fitted for the purpose; she rose from table with her eyes full of tears, she dismissed her courtiers and the foreign ambassadors, and shut herself up in her apartment, and for several days together shewed marks of the profoundest grief; and, to carry on the farce, the following declaration was published:—

"BY the grace of God, Catherine II. Empress and Autocratrix of all the Russias, to all our loving subjects, &c. greeting :

"THE seventh day after our accession to the

throne of all the Russias, we received information, that the late emperor, Peter III. by the *means of a bloody accident in his hinder parts*, commonly called *piles*, to which he had been formerly subject, was attacked with a *most violent and griping cholic*; that, therefore, we might not be wanting in *Christian duty*, nor *disobedient to the divine command*, by which we are enjoined to *preserve the life* of our neighbour, we immediately ordered that the said Peter should be furnished with every thing that might be judged necessary to prevent the dangerous consequences of that accident, and to restore his health by the aids of medicine: but, to our great *regret and affliction*, we were yesterday evening apprized, that, by the permission of the Almighty, the late emperor departed this life. We have, therefore, ordered his body to be conveyed to the monastery of Neffsky, in order to its interment in that place. At the same time, with our imperial and maternal voice, we exhort our faithful subjects to forgive and forget what is past, to pay the last duties to his body, and to pray to God sincerely for the repose of his soul, willing them, however, to consider this *unexpected and sudden death* as an *especial effect of the Providence of God*, whose impenetrable decrees are working for us, for our throne, and for our country, things known only to his holy will.

“Done at St. Petersburg, July  $\frac{7}{18}$  1762.”

The body of the emperor was conveyed to Petersburg, and laid in state for three days in the church of the monastery of St. Alexander Neffsky. It was in an open coffin, dressed in an Holstein uniform, and



persons of all ranks and conditions were permitted to kiss the hand of the deceased. The body was interred in a grave, over which no tomb or inscription was placed. None of the foreign courts went into mourning for the czar, excepting that of Stockholm.

The chancellor Bestucheff, who had been the malignant enemy of the late sovereign, was recalled from his banishment into Siberia. He was received with the greatest mark of esteem; he was restored to his rank of field-marshal, resumed his seat in the council, and had an annual pension of twenty thousand rubles granted him.

Biren, who, from being the son of a peasant, was advanced to a dukedom, had been banished to Siberia for exercising innumerable acts of cruelty and oppression, was recalled by Peter III. Notwithstanding this act of munificence, he attached himself to the interests of Catherine, and became one of her most fawning sycophants.

Catherine was endowed with abilities of a superior nature, which were strikingly displayed in the political transactions of her long and splendid reign. Frederic the Great was the sincere friend of the late monarch; and, notwithstanding the eccentricities which marked the conduct of Peter, entertained a great respect for him. The empress entertained some suspicions that her accession to the supreme sovereignty might not be very palatable; and great fear was excited, lest a war should ensue between Russia and Prussia. But Catherine exhibited a sound policy on this occasion. Upon the Prussian minister being introduced to her, she thus addressed him:

"I am resolved to preserve inviolably in all points the peace concluded under the preceding reign; nevertheless, I have thought it expedient to bring back to Russia by the nearest roads, all my troops in Silesia, Prussia, and Pomerania." What ideas the royal philosopher of "Sans Souci" entertained of Catherine may be gathered from a passage in one of his letters to Count Finkenstein:—

"The emperor of Russia has been dethroned by his consort, as it was to be expected. That princess has much good sense, and the same inclinations as the defunct. She has no religion, but acts the devotee. It is the second volume of Zeno, the Greek emperor, of his wife Adriana, and of Mary de Medrus. The late chancellor Bestucheff was her greatest favourite: and as he has a strong propensity to guineas, I flatter myself that the attachments of the present period will be the same. The poor emperor wanted to imitate Peter I. but he had not the capacity for it."

The commercial relations with England were also renewed by the empress.

Catherine was now preparing for the ceremony of placing the imperial diadem on her head. The coronation was appointed to take place at Moscow. Thither the empress repaired, attended by her favourite, count Gregory Orloff, the chancellor Bestucheff, Count Stroganoff, and a numerous retinue of nobles, the young grand duke, Paul Petrovitch also accompanied her. She was crowned in the chapel of the czars, but the people observed a gloomy silence on this occasion, indicative of dissatisfaction.



The empress, as soon as the ceremony was ended, hastened to return to Petersburg.

Peter the Third had greatly displeased the ecclesiastics by despoiling them of their possessions; Catherine had alleged this as a crime committed by her husband; the clergy therefore considered themselves as entitled to redress from her; but all remonstrances were vain; and the policy of Catherine prohibited a restoration of their property. Enraged at her duplicity, the monks used every effort to excite an insurrection. They asserted the right of prince Iwan to the crown; they also circulated a manifesto, drawn up by the late emperor, in which the empress was accused of adultery. A tremendous crisis appeared approaching; but the partisans of the czarina were on the alert. The military had evidenced some symptoms of discontent; a proclamation was issued, prohibiting the soldiers of the guard from assembling without express orders from their officers. Some of those who had indiscreetly evidenced their sentiments, were subjected to imprisonment and the discipline of the knout, while others were banished to Siberia. Schuwaloff, who was suspected of privately favouring the conspiracy, viewing himself as aggrieved by not being remunerated by Catherine for his services, was forbidden to appear at court; and, as a *reward* for his services, the empress sent him as a present an old Negro, an attendant upon the late emperor, who used to play the part of a buffoon for the amusement of the court.

The power of Orloff was daily augmenting. General Villebois who had been devoted to the service

of Catherine, was dismissed from the office of grand master of the artillery, in which he was succeeded by that favourite. The princess Dashkoff had rendered the most essential services to the empress, yet Catherine behaved to her in the most ungracious manner: she merely requested, as she had an uncommon attachment to marshal scenes, to be appointed *colonel* of the regiment of Preobajensky. But the empress ironically replied, "that the academy would suit her better than a military corps," the princess having used some language expressive of resentment, received an order to retire to Moscow.

"At the same time Catherine commissioned the Piedmontese Odart to engage the ambassador of France to write to Voltaire, cautioning him to be on his guard against the vanity of the princess Dashkoff, and to tell him, that if he should transmit to posterity the event that had just happened in Russia, he need only make mention of this young woman, as having acted a very secondary part in a revolution, the success whereof was owing solely to the wisdom and courage of the empress."

The archbishop of Novogorod was also disgraced, and without any reward for the past, his future services were dispensed with. This prelate was the object of universal execration.

Poniatowsky, having been apprised of the elevation of Catherine, and of her having been empress of all the Russias, received the intelligence, as might be expected, with great pleasure. He went to the frontiers of Poland, from whence he dispatched a messenger to solicit permission to pay his respects



to her majesty. Catherine had secretly kept up a regular correspondence with him, but she was too prudent, so soon after the "*sudden and unexpected death*" of her husband, to grant his request. She returned an answer, that his presence was not required at Petersburg, and that she had different views in his behalf.

Orloff, like most upstart favourites of princes when invested with a plenitude of power, became insolent and arrogant; in fact, he viewed the empress as dependent upon him, instead of being dependent upon her; this was evidenced by the following circumstance. One evening, being at supper with the empress, the hetman Razumoffsky, and some other courtiers, elevated with wine, he proudly boasted of his influence over the guards; and, in expatiating on the magnitude of his power, he observed, that if he chose to abuse it, he could in one moment destroy his own work, and dethrone the empress. "You might do so in one month," said the hetman; "but, my friend, within a fortnight after, we would have hanged you." The other courtiers were offended, but the empress could pardon any thing in Orloff's conduct however presumptuous.

The severity of Catherine to the soldiers who had been accused of conspiring against her, the ingratitude she had displayed to those who had most assisted her, her devotedness to Orloff, and her contempt of the clergy, were subjects of much animadversion, and a spirit of mutiny even among the soldiers. So serious was the aspect of this insurrection, that for one whole day the person of the empress was viewed in great danger. A deputation

of the senate waited upon her to apprise her of the convulsed state of the capital, to whom she replied in the following terms :

“ What fills you with this alarm ? Do you suppose that I am afraid to meet the danger ? or do you presume that I know not how to overcome it ? Remember that you have seen me in moments more terrible than these, being in full possession of the whole vigour of my mind ; and can you for a moment suppose that I cannot support the most cruel reverses of fortune with as much serenity as I have supported her favours ? A few factious spirits, a few mutinous soldiers, you think, are able to deprive me of a crown which I accepted with *reluctance*, and only as the means of delivering the Russian nation from the miseries with which it was menaced. I know not under what pretext they cover their insolence, I know not on what means they rely ; but I once more repeat, they fill me with no alarm. That *providence*, which has elevated me to the throne, will preserve me for the glory and happiness of the empire ; and that almighty arm, which has hitherto been my defence, will now confound my foes.”

The rising mutiny was timely suppressed, chiefly by the agency of bribery. Four of the most active of the insurgents were tried, found guilty of high treason, and received sentence to be executed ; but Catherine, fearful of exercising too great severity, changed their sentence to exile to Siberia. Four officers who had aided the mutiny, were degraded, and scourged by the common executioner.

The late conspiracy gave a lesson to the empress,



which she instantly profited by, to regain the affections of her subjects, which were in some degree alienated from her. She recalled the princess Daschkoff from Moscow, she dismissed the infamous Piedmontese Odart (the David Rizzio of Russia) from her service, and exercised indefatigable attention to public business. She was present at all the deliberations of the cabinet council, perused the despatches from foreign courts, dictated herself the answers to them, and acted upon a system equally wise, as combining to render her admired abroad, and respected at home. The popularity of the empress was daily augmenting, and her rigid attention to the maintenance of justice, promoted it.

A certain officer, whose duty it was to act as registrator to the government chancery of Novogorod, named Jacob Rember, was convicted of having taken money for administering the oath of allegiance, was banished to Siberia. To express her indignation at such conduct, Catherine issued an ukase, or decree, to the following purport:

“ If any one is desirous of an office, he must pay for it; if any person wishes to defend himself from slander, he must do it with money; if any one would slander another he corroborates it by bribes. In this way do many judges convert the sacred tribunes, over which in our name, he presides, into a market. The example of persons, who, in the principal courts, have crept into office only for the purpose of screening themselves from punishment, are imitated, especially in remote parts of the empire, even by judges, and officers of the lowest orders, to the vexation and oppression of the poor, practising

the arts of chicanery, not only in cases of little importance, but under the form of law, which they misinterpret, bringing ruin on the persons and families even of those who are rather deserving of our sovereign favour and complacency."

By another ukase, the empress confirmed that popular act of her predecessor, the abolition of the secret inquisition chancery. Sensible of the wise conduct of Peter the Great, in encouraging the emigration of foreigners to Russia, she published a manifesto, to encourage them to migrate to her dominions; and for the protection of the new colonists, she established a new court of chancery for the express purpose of providing for the guardianship and protection of foreigners. She apportioned lands for their support. In the government of Orien-burg portions of lands for some thousand families. In the territory of Bielgorod, free lands for some hundred farms. In the manifesto, or proclamation, on this subject, it was stated, "That if any person who is destitute, he shall receive money for the expenses of his journey, and shall be forwarded at the charge of the crown. On his arrival, he shall receive a competent assistance, and, if required even an advance of capital, free of interest, for ten years. All that he brings for his own use, is free of duty. The stranger is exempt from all service either military or civil, even from all taxes and imposts for a certain time. In Moscow, Petersburg, and the Livonian towns, he enjoys five free years, in the inland towns ten, on the hitherto uncultivated districts thirty. In these new tracts of land, the colonists shall live according to their own good will, under



their own jurisdiction, without any participation or cognizance of the imperial officers. All religions are tolerated."

As to the consequences resulting from this imperial edict, we shall quote the words of an able writer :

" Scarcely had this inviting voice resounded over Germany, through the organs of the several ministers, than hundreds and thousands flocked to take possession of the promised land on the shores of the Volga and the Samava. For it must be confessed, that in Germany great numbers of people are very reasonably dissatisfied with their condition, sighing under the pressure of religion, of justice, or of finance, or of all the three at once ; and there are certainly many fertile, beautiful, and highly improvable tracts of country in the before-mentioned districts. Individuals and whole families, numerous in women and children, people of tolerable circumstances, beggars, projectors, vagabonds, artificers, mechanics, literati, young and old, set out in haste, to be stowed on board of ship at Lubeck, and other maritime towns on the Baltic. Several of the petty princes of Germany at first issued prohibitions against these emigrations, and their example was afterwards followed by others ; and it is not to be denied, that many of the persons employed in the colonial plan, made use of some indirect means for enticing inconsiderate persons from their occupations. But it received the most effectual check from the reports that soon ran about concerning the new settlers themselves. Letters came full of complaints that their expectations were deceived. The inconveniences

of the journey, the ignorance of the language, the want of their accustomed accommodations, the harshness of many persons in office, might well bring many of the colonists to repent of the rash step they had taken ; others, who wanted only to live in idleness wondered that they were to begin again to work, as it was exactly on that very account they had left home."

Notwithstanding the difficulties ever attending emigrations to a distant country, vast multitudes of families and individuals from Germany, but also from France, Poland, and Sweden, went to settle in Russia.

Catherine was not only anxious to augment the population of her dominions, but also to secure the health of her subjects ; for this purpose she founded the college of medicine of the Russian empire at St. Petersburg. Nor was her attention so engrossed by subjects of domestic policy, as to neglect the military concerns of the empire. In a conversation with the French ambassador, M. de Baetewil, she thus expressed herself. " I have the finest army in the world ; I am rather short of money, it is true, but my financial resources will soon be prosperous and flourishing. If I was to follow my inclination, I should be fonder of war than of peace ; but I am restrained by sentiments of humanity, justice, and reason. However, I shall not be like the empress Elizabeth. I shall not allow myself to be forced to make war ; I shall enter upon it when it will prove advantageous to me, but never from complaisance to others."

Biren, duke of Courland, who had returned from



his exile in Siberia, had, during that period, been deprived of his estates by prince Charles of Saxony, son of Augustus III. king of Poland. Biren was a favourite of the empress, and she supported his cause by ordering the Russian army in Pomerania to march into Courland. Another army was marched into Poland under count Romanzoff. This army was reinforced by twenty thousand auxiliary forces under Prussian colours, commanded by general Chernicheff. These hostile measures soon produced the object wished for, the reinstatement of Biren in his duchy.

A secret treaty had been concluded in 1750, respecting the government of Holstein. The king of Sweden ceded to the king of Denmark his claims to the regency of Holstein during the minority of the grand duke. A Russian prince had just taken the command of Holstein, on account of the empress Catherine. The Danes at first refused to acknowledge his authority; but the menaces of the empress produced a suitable apology from the court of Copenhagen.

The insolence of prince Orloff rendered him obnoxious to the most eminent of the Russian nobility, who absented themselves from court sooner than submit to his arrogance. Sir Nathaniel Wraxall gives a very interesting account of the rise of this minion of the empress.

"Sir Thomas Wroughton," says that elegant writer, told me, "that the first time he ever heard the name of Orloff mentioned, or ever saw the officer who afterwards became, as prince Orloff, the avowed favourite of Catherine in every sense, was

on the following occasion : Crossing the court of the winter palace at Petersburg some time during the year 1760, the grand duchess, who leaned on his arm, pointed out to him a young man in the uniform of the Russian guards, then in the act of saluting her with his spoutoon, and added, '*Vous voyez ce beau jeune homme ? Le connoissez vous ?*'—'Do you see that fine young man ? Do you know him ?' Wroughton replying in the negative, '*Il s'app Orloff,*' said Catherine. '*Croivez vous, qu'il a eu la hardiesse de me faire l'amour ?*'—'*Il est bien hardi, Madame.*'—'He is called Orloff. Will you believe that he has had the boldness to make love to me ?' 'It is very bold, Madam,' answered he, smiling. The conversation proceeded no further ; but it remained deeply imprinted upon Wroughton's recollection, who from that moment silently anticipated the future favour of Orloff." (*Wraxall's Historical Memoirs of my own Time*, vol. i. p. 181.)

Count Panin, so distinguished in the last reign, still enjoyed his influence at court. He wished to prompt the empress to establish an aristocratical senate. On this subject he seized an occasion one day to address her in the following words :

"The sovereigns of this empire, Madam, have hitherto uniformly enjoyed an unlimited power ; but it is the very extent of that power which renders it dangerous to him in whom it is lodged, since it may at any time be usurped by some bold pretender, and the usurper is thenceforth above the laws. Trust me, madam, make the sacrifice of an absolute authority ; create a fixed and permanent council which will secure to you the crown ; solemnly



declare, that you renounce for yourself and for your successors the power of depriving at pleasure the members of that august body ; declare, that if they commit any crime or high misdemeanor their peers alone shall have the right to judge and to condemn them, on accurate and severe informations. From the moment you shall adopt this prudent measure, it will be forgotten that you obtained the crown by violence, in the sentiment that you intend to preserve it only by justice." (*La vie de Catherine Seconde*, tome i.)

The empress was so far pleased with Panin's proposition, as to desire him to draw the plan up in writing for her consideration. The count divulged his ideas to Orloff, who communicated it to the old chancellor Bestucheff, who viewed the plan as pregnant with danger, and immediately waited upon Catherine to conjure her to reject what must occasion a division of her power. The empress, therefore, declined the proposal of Panin.

The chancellor made a vain attempt to produce a marriage between the empress and Orloff, the very rumour of which was disgusting to the people. Many conspiracies were entered into for the destruction of the favourite, one of which had nearly proved fatal. Catherine, alarmed at these circumstances, removed from Moscow to Petersburg, fearful of the effects of popular fury. She had been informed, that Panin and Razumoffsky were among the conspirators, and she strongly suspected the princess Daschkoff: to that lady she dispatched a letter couched in terms of pretended friendship, in which she especially requested to have an interview

with her. The princess, aware of her design, sent the following laconic and spirited answer :

“MADAM,

“I HAVE not heard any thing of the subject you mention ; and if I had, I should be very careful how I spoke of it. What is it you want of me ? That I should die on a scaffold ? I am ready to mount it.”

The empress was too wise to push the matter further, she made no further efforts to tamper with the princess. Some of the subaltern conspirators were exiled to Siberia ; but Panin and Razumofsky, instead of punishment, received several additional marks of favour.

Augustus the Third, king of Poland, having died October 5, 1763, there were various candidates for the vacant crown, which was elective. Catherine had entered into a secret treaty with Prussia, by which they agreed to use their joint efforts for maintaining Poland in its state of free election. The empress had fixed her choice for the new sovereign of Poland on her friend and lover Count Poniatowsky, who was at this time thirty-two years of age. The character of this nobleman is ably sketched by a very ingenious writer.

“Count Poniatowsky was endowed with those qualities which are more adapted to conciliate the friendship of particular persons, than to fit him for swaying a sceptre. Tall, well made, of a figure at once commanding and agreeable, he spoke and wrote with fluency the seven principal languages of



Europe, and in a graceful diction; but he possessed only a slight knowledge of affairs. His eloquence was vague and desultory, his presumption too apparent. Rather weak than gentle, rather prodigal than generous, he might easily mislead women, and dazzle a thoughtless multitude, but not persuade men of cultivated minds. He was doubtless fitter to submit to be governed than to govern himself. Nevertheless, supported by the influence and arms of Russia, and having no obstacle to fear on the part of other powers, his triumph was not long in suspense. The consequence of Catherine was involved in this triumph: that princess set so great a value on seeing the crown of the Sarmates on the brow of her former favourite, that she wrote without delay to Count Kayserling, her ambassador at Warsaw, to employ every means in behalf of Poniatowsky. One of her letters was intercepted, and contained the following words: "My dear count, remember my candidate. I write this at two o'clock in the morning; judge whether I am indifferent about the affair." (*Vie de Catherine Seconde.*)

The empress had an excellent agent in Count Kayserling: he used every engine to procure the diadem for Poniatowsky. The diet of Warsaw immediately elected him king, but great tumults occurred during the sitting of the diet, which was opened with a solemn mass and a sermon; the preacher took his text from II. Kings x. 3. "Look even out the best and meetest of your master's sons; and set him on his father's throne, and fight for your master's house."

The disputes relative to the succession assumed a serious aspect, hostilities commencing between the rival parties. Prince Radzivil, who commanded the Polish troops, attacked the Russians, July 3, 1764, in which the former were defeated. The princess Radzivil, and the prince's own sister, fought on horseback with sabres, and behaved with unprecedented heroism.

On September 7, 1764, Poniatowsky was proclaimed king of Poland, and grand duke of Lithuania, under the name of Stanislaus Augustus.

While the Empress was on a journey to Livonia, prince Iwan was basely assassinated in the fortress of Schlusselfburg, where he had been long confined a prisoner. The assassins were named Vlassieff and Tscheken. Vassily Mirovitch, a lieutenant in the Russian army, had made an endeavour to procure the liberation of this unfortunate prince; but, failing, it occasioned both the death of Iwan, and also brought himself to the block. "After some days spent in the trial, Mirovitch was condemned to lose his head, not as guilty of high treason, but a disturber of the public peace. Unmoved at this sentence, he walked to the scaffold like a man who had nothing to fear." Mirovitch was the only person who suffered death; but fifty-eight persons implicated in the attempt were sentenced to different punishments.

It was not to be supposed that the nobles of the Russian court would long submit to the insolence of Orloff. Count Panin was particularly indignant at the authority assumed by him, and he was determined to use his utmost efforts to procure,



his dismissal. A new favourite had engaged the attention of the amorous empress, a young officer, named Vissensky. Panin put every stratagem in motion to accelerate the promotion of this young man. Orloff, perceiving the splendid rays of this rising sun, prudently averted a sudden and rapid fall, by a complete alteration in his conduct; and by this means he not only preserved his influence over his royal mistress, but he occasioned the young favourite to be dismissed, and invested with an employment in one of the distant provinces of the empire.

Catherine had placed a king on the throne of Poland, but it was not merely on the account of friendship to Poniatowsky, but she had vast views of aggrandisement which were the grand springs of action in her conduct on that occasion. "Thinking herself secure of the entire submission of the king of Poland, she put off all constraint, and openly avowed the designs which even policy had made it a crime in the Poles to have imputed to her. Her pretensions were doubtless extravagant; but, as she was desirous that they should not be useless, she only declared them when on the point of marching the troops that were destined to support them, and proposed nothing but in an imperious tone. After having traced out on the map the lines of demarcation, by which Russia purloined a great part of the territory of Poland, Catherine insisted on the recognition of the validity of those lines, and that the limits of the two countries should thus be fixed. She exacted farther, that the king and the republic should contract with her a treaty of alliance, offen-

sive and defensive, and that they should allow the dissidents to enjoy all the same rights with the catholics, not excepting that of a capacity for being members of the senate. The last of these demands, the only one that was equitable, raised the indignation of an intolerant and despotic nobility. Murmurs were now heard on all sides; mention was made of having recourse to arms. Whether he was really ashamed of the sacrifices that were prescribed to his recognition, or rather afraid of putting the nation in a ferment, the king himself declared that he could not consent to these sacrifices."

The dissidents here referred to were the professors of the protestant religion. The Polish diet assembled September 1, 1766. Great exertions were made in favour of the dissidents, but the bishop of Cracow opposed any privileges being granted to them. Stanislaus was for moderate toleration, but he was virulently attacked as abetting the enemies of the state. The Russian forces now appeared before the gates of Warsaw; prince Repnin, in the name of the empress Catherine, demanded not only a toleration for the dissidents, but that they should be placed on an equality with the members of the established religion. This proposition was rejected. The king now resolved to assemble a diet extraordinary. It might have been presumed, that the presence of the Russian army would have intimidated the members of this diet; but the bishop of Cracow and his adherents were as inimical as ever to the measures proposed. It was on the evening of the day when the diet opened, that while the bishop was at table at Count Minisheck's, a detachment of



Russian soldiers entered the room, and made the prelate prisoner: he was immediately sent off to Siberia. Several Polish nobles were also arrested by order of prince Repnin. The members of the diet presented an address to the king, soliciting him to request the release of the prisoners; but prince Repnin refused acceding to it, the dissidents finally obtained the privileges which Russia demanded.

The augmentation of power which Catherine had acquired, for Stanislaus was absolutely a nominal monarch, and a prisoner in his own capital, filled the crowned heads of Europe with just alarm. The minister of France, the duke de Choiseul, viewed it proper to hold a consultation with the count de Vergennes on the subject. It was deemed requisite to make overtures to the Ottoman Porte, and represent the danger that might ensue if Russia was tamely suffered to gain possession of Poland. The Turkish cabinet transmitted a note to the king of Poland explanatory of the danger to which the Sublime Porte was exposed in consequence of the cession to Russia of the Polish territory. The king gave an ambiguous reply to this memorial.

Catherine had ever been jealous of the princess Dashkoff, and in consequence of some offence, she was a second time banished to Moscow. This was impolitic of the empress, as the people of Moscow were far from being satisfied with her conduct, and the princess did not fail to foment the prevailing dissatisfaction. To counteract the effects of those growing discontents, the empress entertained the inhabitants of Petersburg with two grand and magnificent tournaments in the style of antient

chivalry; but this served rather to increase than allay the spirit of disaffection. A wiser mode Catherine pursued in reforming abuses, establishing useful institutions, correcting the tribunals of public justice, building hospitals, founding schools, and planting colonies. The judges received an augmentation of their salaries better to enable them to execute justice without being exposed to bribery. But to render herself popular, she undertook to legislate for her subjects by composing a new code of laws. To procure materials for this vast undertaking, she sent orders to the most distant parts of the Russian empire for the different laws of those provinces to be transmitted to Moscow, whither she soon after herself repaired to open a meeting of the states. The preliminaries of this important national business consisted in reading the instructions, which was frequently interrupted by bursts of applause. None of the deputies from the provinces attempted to deliver their sentiments excepting the deputies of the Samoiedes, one of whom thus addressed the assembly:

“We are a simple and honest people. We quietly tend our rein-deer. We are in no want of a new code of laws; but make laws for the Russians, our neighbours, that may put a stop to their depredations.”

The new code of laws, having been proposed, and agreed to, before the assembly broke up, the titles of Great, Wise, Prudent, and Mother of the Country, was voted to the empress by acclamation, in answer to which mark of loyalty and attachment, she replied.



"That supposing she had rendered herself worthy of the first title, Great, it belonged to posterity to confer it upon her; that wisdom and prudence were the gifts of heaven, for which she daily gave thanks, without presuming to derive any merit from them herself; and, finally, the title of Mother of the Country, was the most dear of all in her eyes, the only one she could accept, and which she regarded as the best and most glorious recompence for her labours and solitudes in behalf of a people whom she loved."

That we may form some idea of the great and comprehensive mind of Catherine, so eminently exemplified in this work of legislature, (which excited the warmest admiration of Frederick the Great,) we shall insert a few of the provisions of the code.

"The spirit of the nation, the nation itself, ought to be consulted in the framing of laws. Those laws ought to be viewed only as a means of conducting mankind to the height of happiness.

"It is our duty to ameliorate the lot of those who live in a state of dependence. The liberty and the security of the citizens ought to be the grand and primary objects of all laws; they should all tend to render life, honour, and property, as stable and secure as the constitution of the government itself.

"The liberty of the subjects ought only to be restricted in such cases only where their own advantage is concerned.

"In causes purely civil, the laws should be so clear and precise, that the judgments resulting from them should always be in perfect conformity in the same cases, in order to remove that jurisprudence of

decisions which is so often a source of uncertainties, of errors, or acts of injustice, according as a cause has been well or ill defended at one time or at another, gained or lost according to influence or circumstances.

“ It is incomparably better to prevent crimes than to punish them.

“ The life of the meanest citizen is of consequence. No one should be deprived of life, except when required in its defence.

“ In proceedings of trial, the use of torture is contrary to sound reason. Humanity revolts at it; and insists on its being abolished. The office of a judge is only to pronounce, whether the action of the prisoner is conformable to the law, or contrary to it.

“ All punishment is unjust, when not essential for the maintenance of the public safety.”

Notwithstanding the indefatigable endeavours of the empress to gain the hearts of her subjects, there yet remained many disaffected persons, who, ruminating on the death of Peter the Third, and more recently, that of Prince Ivan. A young officer named Tschoglokoff, resolved to avenge their deaths, he was inflamed with a sort of fanatical fury. Equally persevering as sanguinary in his design, he attended the palace day after day, placing himself in a part best calculated for his purpose. There were certain dark passages through which the empress usually passed in the way to her inner apartments. In one of those passages Tschoglokoff concealed himself: fortunately for the czarina, she eluded the blow of the assassin by not



passing that way. The officer incensed at his disappointment, wished to gain an accomplice, and mentioned his design to a brother officer, who immediately gave information to Prince Orloff. Tscho-glokkoff was arrested the next day as he was waiting in the palace; he was armed with a long poinard, which he confessed was to have been plunged into the body of the empress. The punishment of this young man was very lenient; he was exiled to Siberia.

In 1768 the small pox made great ravages in Petersburg, which occasioned the empress and the grand duke, her son, to remain at Zarsko-Zelo. Inoculation had recently been practised with great success in the metropolis of the British empire. Great was the opposition made to it from prejudice. Dr. Isaac Maddox, bishop of Worcester, was eminently instrumental, by his discourses from the pulpit, in removing those prejudices; while the successful practice of the Suttons, and Dr. Thomas Dimsdale, caused inoculation for the small pox to be universally adopted throughout England. In consequence of the fatal effects of this contagious and loathsome disease, the empress directed a letter to her ambassador at London, desiring him to write to Dr. Dimsdale, at Hertford, requesting him, by desire of the empress, to repair to Petersburg, there to introduce inoculation. Upon Dr. Dimsdale's arrival at Petersburg, he waited upon Count Panin, who thus addressed him: "You are now called, Sir, to the most important employment that perhaps any gentleman was ever entrusted with. To your skill and integrity will probably be submitted, no

less than the precious lives of two of the greatest personages in the world, with whose safety the tranquillity and happiness of this great empire are so intimately connected, that should an accident deprive us of either, the blessings we now enjoy might be turned to the utmost state of misery and confusion. May God avert such unspeakable calamities! but the hazard of the infection of the small pox, in the natural way, is so threatening, that we are compelled to have recourse to the expedient of inoculation; which, though so little known in this country, has been adopted and practised in England with the greatest success. We have physicians of great learning and abilities in their profession; but not being experienced in this new branch of practice, her imperial majesty was pleased to lay her commands upon her ministers, to inquire after, and engage, a person of the best abilities in it, and whose success had been confirmed by long practice. You come to us well recommended in these essential points. I shall therefore repose the utmost confidence in you, and have only to request that you will act without the least reserve." (*Dimsdale's Tracts on Inoculation.*)

The empress, the archduke, prince Orloff, and a number of the Russian nobility were inoculated by Dr. Dimsdale, and in reward for his meritorious services, Catherine created him a baron of the Russian empire, made him a counsellor of state, and physician to her majesty, with a pension of five hundred pounds per annum to be paid in England, exclusive of ten thousand pounds paid him in Russia, with two miniature pictures of the empress



and the grand duke set in diamonds. Dr. Dimsdale was accompanied in the journey to Petersburg by his son.

The state of Poland was at this time truly disastrous, it exhibited all the horrors of the most sanguinary civil wars. Austria and France secretly encouraged the Poles to throw off the yoke of Russia. They obtained possession of Cracow and other places. General Soltikoff arrived with a large reinforcement of Russian troops. The Poles applied to the grand sultan for assistance, and was formally proclaimed by the Ottoman Porte against Russia. To evidence the hostile disposition of the Turks, the Russian ambassador was arrested and committed to prison. Catherine retaliated by a well drawn up manifesto, in which she made an appeal to all the nations of Europe as to the justice of her cause. The empress did not rest satisfied with words and empty declamations. She exerted herself in a more energetic manner, by ordering a powerful army to march, which extended from the banks of the Danube to those of the river Kuban.

The Crimean Tartars had espoused the cause of the Turks, and were in arms in opposition to the Russian Eagle.

The imperial general Izaakoff, defeated twelve thousand of those barbarians, while the cossacks penetrated into Moldavia. Prince Galatzin, the gallant leader of the Russian army, having passed the Dniester, made a rash attempt to attack an army of thirty thousand Turks, but experienced a severe repulse. The prince was so unfortunate as to experience another defeat from the forces of

the grand seignior; the Turks pursued the Russians even into Poland, but there they were defeated with great loss.

Catherine meditated a plan of singular enterprise against the haughty power of the crescent, it was an attack upon the Greek islands of the Archipelago. Peter the Great had first created a Russian navy; but naval architecture, and more especially naval tactics, were but little understood. The Russian navy wanted able nautical commanders. For to remedy this deficiency, the empress engaged some English naval officers of distinguished ability, to superintend the fitting out of this fleet; and in fact to direct every thing relative to marine service, inspection of dock yards, &c. Sir Charles Knowles was peculiarly distinguished by the empress for his talents in those respects. In the autumn of 1769, two fine squadrons of men of war proudly set sail from Archangel, steering their course for the Mediterranean. This fleet consisted of twenty sail of the line, six frigates, several transports, bomb-ketches, and gallies. It was commanded by admiral Spiridoff, but Alexis Orloff, brother to the prince, was the grand admiral. The command of the Russian troops was conferred on count Romanzoff. The campaign opened with the siege of Bender, but the Tartars prevented that place from being taken, but the Russians captured Yassi and Ibrailoff. A sanguinary battle was fought on the banks of the Pruth. The Turks mustered 80,000 men, headed by the khan of the Crimea, the Russians were commanded by Romanzoff. After the fortune of



war appeared in favour of the latter, by a masterly manœuvre of Romanzoff, in the heat of pursuing the Turks, he found himself surrounded by 150,000 Turks. In this critical situation, Romanzoff ordered his men to charge with bayonets fixed. The Turks, unable to stand the furious attack, retreated in the utmost confusion, and were completely defeated. The greater part of the baggage and stores of the Turkish army, 143 pieces of brass cannon, and 7000 waggons loaded with provisions, fell into the hands of the Russians.

The victorious Romanzoff immediately crossed the Dniester, and again laid siege to Bender, which surrendered after a siege of three months, September, 1769. At the same time, general Igelstrohn gained possession of the town and fortress of Ackerman, the capital of Bessarabia. The terror of the Russian arms spread far and wide, and the provinces of Moldavia and Wallachia sent deputies to do homage to Catherine. In the Archipelago, the Russians were received with the most lively emotions of joy. The Greeks were desirous of being freed from the yoke of the Mussulmen. Admiral Spiridoff's fleet was joined by another squadron, under the command of vice admiral Elphinston, an eminent English naval officer. The Turkish fleet was commanded by Hassan, a pacha of great notoriety. He succeeded in obliging the Russians to abandon Lemnos. An engagement took place between the fleets, July 5, 1770. The two flag ships blew up with a tremendous explosion, by the brave exertions of admiral Elphinston and admiral Greig, the English commanders. The



*Officer of Imperial Guards.*





Turkish fleet was annihilated. In the Turkish empire, the famous Ali Bey had hoisted the standard of rebellion against the sultan, and if supported by the influence of Russia, he would have unquestionably shaken the Ottoman empire to its foundation; but Alexis Orloff made no exertions in this respect.

Orloff, after having visited Petersburg, and receiving honours for a victory not obtained by him, he rejoined the Russian squadron at Leghorn. While at Petersburg he was furnished with a secret commission relative to a young lady, presumed to be of no small rank. This was the princess Tarrakanoff, the youngest daughter of the empress Elizabeth, by her clandestine marriage with Gregory Razumoffsky. Prince Radzivil carried off this lady to Rome. Catherine being informed of this event, resolved to counteract the designs of Radzivil. She caused all his estates to be seized; he was then in Italy. Upon his return to Russia, the empress made him an offer to return his possessions, provided he would bring the young princess to Petersburg. He refused acceding to that proposal, but he promised to give himself no further concern about the young lady. In consequence, Alexis Orloff was ordered, the moment he arrived at Leghorn, to use every stratagem to obtain possession of the princess. He dispatched, accordingly, an emissary to Rome, who having discovered the apartments of the princess, this intriguer informed her that he was ordered by Count Orloff to offer her the throne which her mother had filled. During the time of this negotiation, Orloff himself



arrived at Rome. With an atrocity worthy of his infamous character, he made love to the princess of Tarrakanoff, and the princess was persuaded to undergo the deceitful forms of a mock marriage. Orloff conveyed his pretended bride to Pisa, at the time when the Russian squadron, under the command of Admiral Greig, had entered the port of Leghorn. Orloff immediately informed the princess that he must set off to that city, and requested her to accompany him. On arriving at Leghorn she was lodged in the house of Sir John Dick, the English consul.

The princess was anxious to view the Russian fleet. "On her coming down she was handed into a boat with magnificent awnings. The consul, and several ladies, seated themselves with her. A second boat conveyed Vice Admiral Greig, and count Alexis Orloff; and a third, filled with Russian and English officers, closed the procession. The boats put off from shore in sight of an immense multitude of people, and were received by the fleet with a band of music, salutes of artillery, and repeated huzzas. As the princess came alongside the ship of which she was to go on board, a splendid chair was let down from the yard, in which being seated, she was hoisted upon deck, and it was observed to her, that these were particular honours paid to her on account of her rank. But no sooner was she on board, than she was handcuffed. In vain she implored for pity of the cruel betrayer, whom she still called her husband. In vain she threw herself at his feet, and watered them with her tears. On arriving at Petersburg the

young victim was shut up in the fortress, and what became of her afterwards, was never known." (*Vie de Catherine Seconde.*)

Sir Nathaniel Wraxall has greatly elucidated this mysterious circumstance.

"Dining in a large company (says Sir Nathaniel) at Mr. Thomas Hope's, in Berkely Square, on Sunday the 10th of February, 1799, I sat by Sir John Dick; and well knowing his intimacy with Alexis Orloff, I enquired of him, "Where the count then was?" "He is," answered Sir John Dick, "at present at Leipsic, from which place he wrote to me only three weeks ago. The emperor Paul commanded him to travel, after having made him, and prince Baratinskoi, both of whom assisted in the termination of Peter's life, to assist likewise at the funeral ceremonies of that prince. They held the pall, and actually mounted guard over the body, in the church of the citadel of Petersburg, remaining the whole night with the corpse. Alexis went through this function with perfect composure."

"Encouraged by the frankness of this reply, I ventured to ask him, if he had read the narrative of the princess Tarrakanoff's seizure, related in "*La Vie de Catherine Seconde.*" "I have certainly perused it," said he, "and not without some concern, as I am there accused by name, no less than my wife, of having been a party to the act of transporting by violence, a young, unsuspecting, and innocent princess, on board the Russian fleet. I will relate to you, as a man of veracity, all the part that I took, and all I know, relative to the pretended princess in question, who is there as-



serted to have been a daughter of Elizabeth, empress of Russia, by Alexis Razumoffsky.

“ During the time that the Russian squadron lay in the harbour of Leghorn, 1771, Alexis Orloff, who was the admiral, resided frequently, if not principally, at Pisa, where he hired a splendid house. One morning, about eleven o'clock, a cossack, who was in his service, and who acted as his courier, arrived at my door, charged with a message to inform me, that his master, with some company in three carriages, meant to dine with me on that day. I accordingly ordered a dinner to be prepared for his reception. When he arrived, he brought with him a lady, whom he introduced to my wife and to myself, but he never named her, only calling her, “ Questa Dama.” She was by no means handsome, though genteel in her figure, apparently thirty years of age, and had the air of a person who had suffered by her health. There seemed something mysterious about her, which excited my curiosity, but which I could not penetrate. Considering her with attention, it struck me forcibly that I had seen her before, and in England. Being determined, if possible, to satisfy myself on this point, as we stood leaning against the chimney piece in my drawing room, before dinner, I said to her, “ I believe madam, you English.” “ I speak only one little,” answered she. We sat down to dinner, and after the repast Alexis Orloff proposed to my wife, and to another lady who was there present, to accompany him and the female stranger on board his ship. They both declining it, Orloff took her with him in the evening. The boom, or

chain, was then stretched across the harbour; but a boat came from the Russian admiral's ship, into which he put the lady, and accompanied her himself safe on board.

"On the ensuing morning, when Orloff came on shore, he proceeded to my house. His eyes were violently inflamed, and his whole countenance betrayed much agitation. Without explaining to me the cause or the reason of this disorder, he owned that he had passed a very unpleasant night, and he requested me to let him have some of the most amusing books in my library, in order to divert the lady who was on board the ship. I never saw her again; but I know that soon afterwards, she was sent by Alexis in a frigate to Cronstadt, where, without being ever landed, she was transferred up the Neva to the fortress of Schlusselfbourg, at the mouth of the lake Ladoga. Catherine there confined her, in the very room that Peter the Third had caused to be constructed, with intent to shut up herself in it. The lady unquestionably died in that prison of chagrin, but she was not drowned by the water of the Neva coming into her apartment, as is asserted in "*La Vie de Catherine Seconde*."

"Having stated to you," continued Sir John Dick, "these circumstances, I will now inform you who, and of what description, was the lady in question. Far from being, as is pretended, a daughter of Elizabeth, empress of Russia, her father was a baker of Nuremburg, in Franconia. If on this point my testimony should appear to you suspicious, the present margrave of Anspach, who



is in this country, and who knew her well, is ready to testify the same fact. She was a woman of pleasure during a short time, both in Paris and here in London, at which last mentioned city she had picked up a few words of English. Prince Nicholas Radzivil, who was driven out of Poland by the Russians, having met with her, made her his mistress, and carried her with him into Italy. In order to revenge himself on Catherine, who had expelled him from his native country, and confiscated his immense states in Lithuania, he resolved on calling her the princess Tarrakanoff, pretending that she was Elizabeth's daughter. Such she was in fact considered to be by many people, and the report acquiring strength, soon reached Petersburg. Catherine, naturally alarmed at the existence of a pretender who might lay claim to the very throne of Russia, and being informed that prince Radzivil asserted her right to the empire, as a legitimate daughter of Elizabeth, by Razumoffsky, to whom she had been secretly married, thought that not a moment was to be lost in securing the person of so dangerous a rival. She issued private orders, therefore, to Alexis Orloff, enjoining him to gain possession of the pretended princess at all events, and by every possible means, either of money or violence. To so great a height did the empress's apprehensions rise, that Orloff avowed to me, he had received the positive commands of her majesty to pursue her even to Ragusa, if necessary, where it was understood she had retired, to demand her from the government of that small republic; and if they should refuse to give her up, to bombard the

city, and to lay it in ashes. But Alexis found means to entrap, or to entice her, without either disturbance or hostility. He treated her as his mistress while he resided at Pisa, and while she lay on board his ship at Leghorn. These are all the particulars that I know relative to her, and all the share I had in her detention, or her misfortunes."

To this statement of the British consul, Sir N. Wraxhall adds the following comment:

"It is probable that this recital, however natural and plausible it may appear, or however true it may be in point of fact, will nevertheless, by no means, carry conviction to every mind. I confess that it neither produced that sentiment in me at the time when Sir John Dick related it, nor on the fullest consideration am I thoroughly persuaded that the person in question was not the daughter of Elizabeth. It seems to be universally admitted, and I have always been so assured, that the empress did privately espouse Razumoffsky; that she had by him, between the years 1740 and 1745, various children, one of whom was brought up, and called the princess or countess of Tarrakanoff. Prince Radzivil might, as is asserted in "*La Vie de Catherine Seconde*," have contrived means to carry her off, and after accompanying her to Rome, might there have quitted or deserted her. It is unquestionable, even by Sir John Dick's account, that Catherine dreaded her, and that Orloff, by her orders, decoyed, ensnared, and made himself master of the person of this unfortunate female. But that in order to effect his base and barbarous purpose,



Orloff actually married her, or pretended so to do; that she passed *several days* under Sir John Dick's roof in amusement and dissipation; that the "consul, his wife, and the wife of rear admiral Greig, took their seats by her in the barge which conveyed her on board the Russian squadron;" finally, that a British consul would dishonour himself, his sovereign, [and his nation, by openly facilitating so perfidious an act, all these assertions, and many others relative to her treatment on board Orloff's ship, appear to me wholly undeserving of credit. They are indeed completely disproved by Sir John Dick's narrative to me, and wholly undeserving of credit." (*Wraxall's Historical Memoirs*, vol. i. p. 183—190.

Although repeatedly conquered, the Turkish armies were almost instantly recruited. They however sustained another defeat near Isuccra, by the Russian general Veissman. The grand vizier however forced him to repass the Danube, and with an army of 100,000 men, he advanced to Bucharest. After three engagements, in which the Russians had the advantage, the grand vizier retreated into the mountains of the Bulgarians, and Romanzoff took up his winter quarters in Moldavia and Wallachia. Prince Dolgorucky rendered an important service to the empress, by conquering the whole of the Crimea, and forcing the khan to retreat into Turkey.

The conduct of Gregory Orloff continued to be the subject of general disgust. His arrogance was such, that he behaved with disrespect even to the empress. Count Panin had long wished to effect

the downfall of Orloff. Catherine had recently bestowed some attention to a sub-lieutenant of the guards, named Vassiltschikoff. Panin resolved to promote the elevation of this young man as the rival of Orloff. Through the interest of the count and of prince Baratinsky, the new favourite was appointed chamberlain to the empress. Orloff had been sent as plenipotentiary, to negotiate a peace with the Turks at Fokshiani; upon hearing of the appointment of Vassiltschikoff, he was filled with rage, and instantly left Fokshiani, and unexpectedly arrived at the gate of Petersburg, when to his utter astonishment he was refused entrance. Orloff disguised his anger, and retired to one of his country seats. The empress sent a deputation, demanding the resignation of the offices he held, but he refused to comply. It was at length agreed that he should make a tour through different parts of Europe; and the empress, as a remuneration for past services, granted him a liberal pension, and made him a present of a magnificent service of plate. He was also created a prince of the Roman empire.

The grand and mighty project which so long had employed the mind of Catherine, namely, the dismemberment of Poland, was now developing. Frederick, king of Prussia, had an interview in 1770, at Neustadt in Austria, with Joseph the second, emperor of Germany, in which the former communicated the design of partitioning Poland. "All Europe had its eyes fixed on Poland. It could not be conceived why three formidable powers, in a time of profound peace, should seize upon a country, the independence whereof had been



guaranteed by the most solemn treaties. Mankind were likewise at a loss to know what might be the drift of the negotiations which continually employed those powers. It was at length discovered. The minister of the emperor was the first who notified the treaty of Petersburg to the king and senate of Poland. The ambassador of Russia and the envoy of Prussia presented to them almost immediately upon it, declarations in support of it." The Poles on hearing the declarations read were filled with indignation. On April 19, 1773, the diet assembled, the majority of the assembly protested against the dismemberment of Poland. The Russian and Prussian ministers menaced the members with a threat of arresting and deposing the king; and that Warsaw should be delivered up to be pillaged by the soldiers. The diet was at length forced to give its assent to the annihilation of the liberty of its country.

"As soon as the accession to the treaty of partition was voted, (says the author of the life of Catherine the Second,) several of the principal members of the diet repaired to the king, and reproached him sharply with the ruin of their country. The monarch at first answered them with gentleness, but soon perceiving that his moderation served to embolden them, and to provoke fresh insults, he rose up, threw his hat upon the floor, and said to them haughtily, "Gentlemen, I am weary of hearkening to you. The partition of our unhappy country is a consequence of your ambition, of your dissensions, and your eternal disputes. It is to yourselves alone that you ought to attribute your misfortunes. As for me,

if no more territory should be left me than could be covered by this hat, I should nevertheless be still in the eyes of all Europe, your lawful, but unhappy king."

"By the dismemberment of Poland, it lost nearly 5,000,000 of inhabitants. The country that fell to Russia, and which was the most extensive, contained 1,500,000. That which Austria had, 2,500,000, on a territory far less extensive. Prussia acquired only 860,000 souls, but she was compensated by the commerce and the vicinity of the Vistula, and by the city of Dantzic, of which Frederick had already laid the plan of rendering himself master."

No sooner was Poland dismembered, than the usurping sovereigns resolved to new model the constitution of the country. A new diet was convened, when the Russian ambassador caused the project or prospectus of the new constitution to be read. By the new regulations, the crown of Poland was declared to be elective for ever; none but a Pole by parentage to be elected king of Poland, and grand duke of Lithuania; the government was to be free and independent, and to be of the republican form, consisting of the king, the senate, and the nobility. By the manœuvres of Stackebberg, the Russian minister, the majority of the deputies of the diet voted for the new constitution.

While Catherine was thus partitioning the unhappy kingdom of Poland, her armies were ravaging the frontiers of Turkey. Fourteen thousand Russians, while attempting to pass the Danube, were suddenly attacked by the Turks, who took six hundred of them prisoners. Prince Repnin, the Russian general,



was among the number. He was sent to Constantinople, and confined in the castle of the seven towers. The Turks were also successful in causing marshal Romanzoff to repass the Danube, with the loss of some of his troops. On the left bank of the river the grand vizier was encamped, and at Roskana a detachment of his forces defeated the Russians. Chagrined at these circumstances, the empress sent dispatches to Romanzoff, desiring to be acquainted with the reason of his neglect in not acting on the offensive. The marshal sent word in reply, "That the grand vizier had three times the force he had, and that an engagement would probably turn to his advantage. Catherine immediately wrote an answer in the following words: "The Romans never enquired after the number of their enemies, but where they were encamped in order to give battle to them." The death of the sultan Mustapha III. did not interrupt the progress of hostilities between Russia and Turkey. His brother, who succeeded to the throne, made great preparations for carrying on the war, and the Turkish forces amounted to 400,000 men.

Romanzoff, in passing the Danube, was again assailed by the Turks, but he effected the passage without much loss. Romanzoff had under him, general Soltikoff, and the famous general Suwarrow. The Russians marched to the gates of Silistria. The Turks made a fierce attack upon Soltikoff, but though they amounted to 25,000 strong, they were gallantly repulsed by the Russians. General Suwarrow defeated the Turks under the command of the Reis Effendi, and took the whole of his artillery.

Romanzoff attacked the grand vizier in his encampment, and forced him to sue for peace. Preliminaries of peace were opened at Kutshuk-Kainardshi in Bulgaria, and after considerable discussion, were signed by the plenipotentiaries of the respective powers. The Ottoman porte ceded to Russia the free navigation of the Euxine and all the Turkish seas, together with the passage of the Dardanelles; but upon the express condition, that there should never be more than one Russian armed vessel in those Seas. Azoff, Tuganrog, and Kinburn, were kept by Russia. The other captured places were restored to Turkey. The Crimea was made independent. A tract of land, lying on the Euxine, between the Bog and the Dnieper, was also given to the empress. By this peace Catherine not only added to her territories and opened new sources of wealth for Russia, but established on a firm basis the glory of her empire.

An immense emigration of the Calmuc Tartars greatly weakened Asiatic Russia. They proceeded to the borders of China. The empress sent a memorial to the emperor of China, to insist upon the restitution of the emigrants. The supreme tribunal at Pekin sent an answer to the empress to the following purport: "That their sovereign was not a prince so unjust as to deliver up his subjects to foreigners, nor so cruel a father as to drive away children who returned to the bosom of their family. That he had no intimation of the design of the Calmucs till the moment of their arrival, and that then, without delay, he caused to be restored to them the habitations that had belonged to them from time



immemorial. That in short the empress had no reason to complain of the Calmucs, but certainly of the officer who had dared to lift his hand against a servant of the khan's." It was the emperor Kien Long to whom Catherine applied in this instance, and from whom she received an answer so little pleasing to her feelings; and shortly after, having sent an ambassador to the court of Peking to negotiate a new treaty with the emperor of China, the latter said indignantly to the Russian envoy: "Let your mistress learn to keep old treaties, and then it will be time enough to apply for new ones." The number of families of the Calmucs which emigrated to China, was estimated at 70,000.

Prince Orloff, who had been dismissed from his employments, and was supposed to be making the tour of Europe, unexpectedly made his appearance at Petersburg, but the empress refused to admit him into her presence, but she sent him various presents; she at the same time ordered him to leave the capital and repair to Reval. The new favourite Vassiltschikoff had lost his attractions, and by the wayward empress was sent in disgrace to Moscow. Orloff did not remain long at Reval. It was presumed that he was secretly recalled by Catherine. Indeed subsequent events demonstrated that to be the fact. He made his public appearance at court, and was most graciously received by his royal mistress, who reinstated him in all his courtly places.

A marriage was negotiated between the grand duke Paul and the princess Wilhelmina, daughter of the landgrave of Hesse Darmstadt.

At this time Catherine sent invitations to Voltaire and Diderot to pay her a visit at Petersburg; the former declined the honour, the latter accepted the offer. "He travelled to St. Petersburg. Catherine lavished on him largesses and encomiums. During the whole time of his stay at her court, she discoursed with him every day at the conclusion of dinner. Philosophy, legislation, politics, were commonly the subject of these conversations. Diderot unfolded his principles on the liberty and the rights of nations with his usual enthusiasm and eloquence. The empress seemed to be delighted with them, but was not the more disposed to put them in practice.

"Monsieur Diderot (said she) is a hundred years old in many respects, but in others he is no more than ten." Diderot was placed always by the empress's side. In his moments of enthusiasm, Diderot sometimes hit her knees with the back of his hand, she never seemed to take offence at it.

The empress was animated with the noble design, not only of inviting men of genius and literary talent to her dominions, but treading in the steps of Peter the Great, she was peculiarly attentive to the embellishment of the capital of her dominions.

"The buildings and embellishments of St. Petersburg, (says the judicious author of the "*Life of Catherine II.*") proceeded without interruption: and works of really imperial magnificence were brought to effect, which render that city in many respects superior to any other. The Neva, the Fontanka, and the Catherina canals, were embanked with granite, and provided with spacious quays of the same material, and elegant balustrades of iron, so as to



form agreeable walks through the several quarters of the town. Sumptuous bridges richly ornamented, of hewn granite, were likewise constructed in various parts across the Moika, the Fontanka, and the several canals that unite their streams. Palaces and public offices were erected; among them a palace of prodigious magnitude, built entirely of marble of divers colours from Siberia. If the eye of the stranger, dazzled with so much brilliance and splendour as this residence affords, sees with concern and almost with disgust the intervals of wretched huts and dirty lanes; yet the inhabitants, recollecting with real satisfaction the former condition of most of the quarters and streets, feels the more sensibly the almost magical improvements, and looks forward with complacency at what the whole must gradually become. Of the immense Ladoga canal, the banks that were supported by timbers, are, since 1763, faced with stone. The many benevolent and public spirited institutions of the empress, required new buildings, which were constantly erected with magnificence and taste. Nor were her cares confined to the residence alone, other cities likewise were growing in riches and splendour under her forming hand."

While thus meritoriously engaged in devoting a period of peace to the promotion of the grandeur and splendour of her empire, an insurrection broke out of a most serious and alarming nature. A man named Pugatscheff, the son of a Don cossack, appeared in the assumed character of the late emperor Peter the third. He was aided and abetted by some Polish monks. While endeavouring to enlist

the cossacks in his service, and having rendezvoused in the mountains of Caucasus, he was seized, and sent to take his trial at Casan: by bribing his keepers he escaped from prison. He now hoisted the standard of rebellion, and publicly announced himself to be Peter the late czar, who had by flight escaped from the fury of his persecutors. He was joined by the cossacks of the Caspian. On September 17, 1773, Pugatscheff found himself at the head of 300 men, with whom he marched to besiege the town of Yaitskoy, in which were 5000 cossacks and two field regiments; and in consequence of a manifesto which he found means to circulate, the whole body of the cossacks came over to him, and he immediately ordered the commander of the place to be hanged up. Pugatscheff next led his troops against Orenburg, before which he had an engagement with the imperial general Karr, whom he defeated. Flushed with his success, the imposter attacked those colonies which the empress had newly formed on the banks of the river Irghis, and he carried off a deal of booty. His army had now increased to fourteen thousand men, with which he again marched to besiege Yaitskoy. The new governor made a brave resistance, and Pugatscheff resolved to reduce the place by famine. The garrison was reduced to the most possible distress. Horse flesh and boiled leather were the only articles of subsistence. The town was happily relieved by the arrival of a considerable Russian force. In several enterprises, Pugatscheff was successful, and he routed a body of forces under Colonel Buloff, whom he inhumanly put to death. General Cherni-



cheff was also defeated, and suffered a similar fate. The rebel chief immediately laid siege to Orenburg. This place was on the point of being surrendered, when a detachment of Russians cut their way through the besieging army, and entered the town in triumph. He was now joined by various tribes of the wild inhabitants of Russia. The Baschkirs, the Kirguises, and the Budyak Tartars; as also by the peasants in the mountains of Oural. The rebels continued to besiege Orenburg, and Pugatscheff's army was augmented by the arrival of 10,000 Calmuc Tartars. The mock emperor now assumed an exterior of more than ordinary sanctity. He exercised the functions of a bishop, dressed in episcopal vestments, and gave his benediction to the people.

The spirit of revolt had spread even to Moscow, which was defended by a garrison of only six hundred men, but Pugatscheff neglected to appear before that ancient city, when infallibly the gates would have been thrown open to him; he directed his attention to the sieges of Yaitskoy and Orenburg. His savage ferocity was barbarously displayed while before this latter place. He caused all the officers and gentry of the surrounding country, and their wives and children, to be put to death.

To stem the progress of the rebellion, the empress ordered General Bibikoff to march with a considerable army against Pugatscheff, and issued a manifesto against the rebels; and by an ukase, she offered a reward of an hundred thousand rubles for the head of the imposter. Pugatscheff published declarations in support of his cause, and caused

rubles to be coined with his effigy, and this inscription: "Peter III. Emperor and Autocrator of all the Russias." The insurgents, having captured Samara, general Bibikoff, having invested it, made himself master of it, the rebels having abandoned the place, taking with them eight pieces of cannon and 200 prisoners. Bibikoff was soon joined by a number of adherents, who were zealously attached to the interests of their sovereign.

On January 9, 1774, colonel Grineff defeated the rebels at Alexief, and three pieces of artillery were taken from them. The Russian commander-in-chief had 35,000 effective men, with which army he caused Pugatscheff to raise the siege of Orenburg: the rebels retreated, and Bibikoff sent prince Gallitzin in pursuit of them. A battle ensued, in which, although the prince evinced great valour, he was not victorious. In another engagement, Pugatscheff defeated general Bibikoff, who perished in the battle. Gallitzin attacked the rebels near Kargaula, and completely routed them. Pugatscheff fled for refuge into the mountains of Oural; there he reunited his scattered forces, and descending from the mountains, marched to Kasan; upon approaching which he set fire to the suburbs, having not been able to continue the siege.

General Potemkin, with a degree of cowardice highly derogatory to his general character as a military man, suffered himself to be shut up in the fortress of Kasan, where he was besieged; and had it not been for the grand exertions of colonel Mickelson, the general would have fallen into the hands of the enemy.



Pugatscheff having encountered many and even superior difficulties, he acted with a bravery and courage unworthy of the cause in which he was engaged, yet he was successful in many minor attacks. On the banks of the Volga, he descended along that river, and took by assault two or three small forts, he also captured the town of Dmitesk. While in this place he committed an act of the most savage barbarity.

Lovitch, an eminent astronomer, and member of the royal academy of sciences at Petersburg, was employed at that time by the empress in surveying for a projected canal, between the rivers Don and the Volga. Pugatscheff ordered the astronomer to be brought before him; and, with a ferocity analogous to his execrable character, he ordered Lovitch to be hoisted up on the end of pikes; and, while writhing in torture, coolly observed, "That he elevated the astronomer nearer the stars." Lovitch was afterward cut to pieces.

General Panin was at length sent by the empress to arrest the progress of the impostor; and, to put an end to his barbarities, cruelties, and excesses, colonel Mickelson, who was sent by Panin to suppress the rebels, was in some degree successful; but the destiny of Pugatscheff was settled by the treachery of one of his adherents.

Antizoff, one of the chiefs of the Cossacks, being taken prisoner, was allured by bribes to give such communications as led to the apprehension of the daring rebel. He was reduced to such a deplorable state as to experience hunger so much as to be made prisoner while gnawing the bones of a horse.

The soldiers ran up to him, some of his own troops saying, "Come, thou hast been long enough emperor." Pugatscheff fired a pistol, and shattered the arm of the foremost. The residue of the Cossacks rushed upon him, and, having secured their prisoner, carried him off. He was first consigned over to general Suwarrow, and afterwards to count Panin. Pugatscheff, like Bazazet when conquered by Tamerlane, was conveyed in an *iron cage* to Moscow, with several of his accomplices bound in chains. The empress Catherine, when informed of the caption of the rebel leader, issued a commission for his immediate trial. Upon the appearance of the culprit before the court of judicature, Pugatscheff, being found guilty of levying arms against her imperial majesty, was sentenced to have his hands and feet cut off, and afterward to be quartered alive. Such a sentence was but a just retribution for his execrable conduct, for his barbarity in immolating so many human sacrifices at the shrine of his inordinate ambition. Yet, however, a sentence justly passed upon him, was not executed to the extent; he was beheaded, but he was not quartered *alive*, but the body was cut into quarters. Five of Pugatscheff's accomplices were also beheaded, three were suspended on a gibbet, and eighteen were exiled to Siberia. Pugatscheff in his last moments acknowledged the justice of his sentence, and the iniquity of his imposture.

In 1779, the empress Catherine was involved in disputes with Germany. In consequence of the invasion of Bavaria by the German troops, differences had arisen between Austria and Prussia, and Catherine



was by every motive of policy induced to support the court of Berlin in opposition to that of Vienna. A treaty was however concluded, in which the house of Austria obtained a portion of Bavaria. During the progress of that unhappy war, in which Great Britain was involved with the American colonies, the commercial interests of Hamburg, Lubeck, and Bremen, were greatly injured by the depredations of privateers. The merchants residing in those places, drew up a memorial to the empress of Russia, expressive of those grievances which they presumed they suffered under. The empress had profited by an idea projected by the count de Vergennes, then the minister of the court of Versailles, of an armed neutrality. In fact, the idea acted upon, in which all the northern powers had joined, was nothing more or less than a menace to Great Britain, at that time engaged not only in a war with her own colonies in North America, but with the congregated force of France, Spain, and Holland.

In a declaration which the empress caused to be transmitted to the court of St. James, she complained, "That the law of nations had been violated towards her subjects, that their commerce had been confined, and that, to prevent such abuses for the time to come, she was preparing to assert by force those rights which undoubtedly belong to neutral powers. In reply to this declaration, it was stated by the court of St. James's, That from the very commencement of the war, it had issued the most precise and unequivocal orders to all commanders of vessels respecting the Russian flag. Some Rus-

sian ships had, however, been captured by British cruisers, and condemned by the court of admiralty. Catherine refused to acknowledge the authority of that tribunal, and the British court was at length compelled to make restitution. Sir James Harris (now Lord Malmesbury) was then ambassador at St. Petersburg, and he used every exertion to break the league which supported an armed neutrality. He endeavoured to persuade prince Potemkin, who had great influence with the empress, to recede from that line of policy she had adopted, but in vain.

"Prince Potemkin all this while was at the summit of favour. Every day some new present from the sovereign increased his immense riches; and some title of honour was added to the long list of his dignities. The court, the army, the navy, all were submissive to him. He appointed the ministers, the generals, the favourites, or removed them at his pleasure, and his animadversions were entirely directed by caprice.

"With all the outward appearance of a rough and often brutal frankness, Potemkin was extremely artful. He domineered over the empress, magisterially dictating to her his will, but at the same time appearing only to exist for her service. He treated with insolence the veteran commanders, and the great personages of the empire, whom he thought he could affront with impunity, while he kept on good terms with all those whom he knew to possess spirit or cunning."

It has been ascertained that among those who were most in the confidence of this prime favourite



of the empress Catherine, was the notorious major Semple. It is not to be wondered at, that so adroit an adept in imposture, should have imposed upon, and cruelly abused the confidence placed in him by prince Potemkin. The merchants of Narva, Petersburg, and Riga, essentially experienced the ill effects of prince Potemkin's kind, but ill-fated patronage of major Semple.

Catherine exercised an unlimited range with respect to her favourites, and her amours were of a transitory nature. Orloff, once the favourite, was supplanted by another, and he who succeeded was rivalled by prince Potemkin; when his honours faded, then arose Korzakoff, to whom the empress was the most lavish of diamonds, than to any other favourite on whom she had bestowed jewels.— Finally, the empress fixed her affections upon Lanskoi, a branch of an antient family in Poland. He was one of the chevalier guards, a corps of which prince Potemkin was captain. The following accurate and curious description of the *costume* of this corps we extract from an author whom we have had frequent occasion to quote, and whose ability and talent as an historian and biographer we justly esteem :

“ The whole corps is composed of tall handsome men, and the state uniform probably exceeds in magnificence any military uniform of antient or modern times. The coat is blue, faced with red, and almost covered with silver lace, embroidery, and hammered silver. On the back is embroidered a large Russian spread eagle; an eagle likewise adorns the silver plates of armour, on the arms and

knees, which are fastened by silver cords, and are attached again to the body armour by silver chains. The boots are drawn together with silver lacing, and the tops hung with chains of the same metal. The head is decorated by a helmet of silver, with high plumes of various gaudy colours. The whole armour greatly resembles what we see still hang up of that kind in armouries, excepting that it is all of silver." (*Life of Catherine II.* vol. iii. p. 23.)

Lanskoi, the new favourite, is represented to have been "a youth of as fine and interesting a figure as the imagination can paint."

Catherine had wished to have an interview with the emperor of Germany, Joseph the Second; for this purpose she invited him to meet her at Mophileff, where she arrived on May 30, 1780. Joseph travelled under the title of Count Falkenstein. The conversations between the august sovereigns related to an attack upon certain parts of the Ottoman empire, and the re-establishment of the antient republics of Greece. The result was a treaty between Catherine and Joseph, ratified and signed at Petersburg. The latter, who was an enemy to all the pomp of a court and state etiquette, resided at Zarsko-Celo; the place in which he resided was designated the "The Falkenstein Arms." Scarcely had the emperor left Russia, than the hereditary prince of Prussia arrived at St. Petersburg.

Catherine was meditating a war with the Turkish empire. "The navigation of the Euxine, the opening the gates of the Dardanelles and Bosphorus, so as to admit a free intercourse from the White Sea to the Euxine, the affairs of the Crimea with



those of the Greek dependent provinces of Moldavia and Wallachia, afforded the grounds of those disputes between the two empires, which were now risen to such a height as seemed to render a new war inevitable." The admission of Russia to the navigation of the Euxine was viewed by the Porte as highly injurious to the interests of Turkey. The disputes were carried almost to the point of a renewal of hostilities, when the court of France mediated a reconciliation.

"By the new convention," says the author of the Life of Catherine, "which was now signed, concessions were made on both sides, and matters of claim, interference, and litigation, amicably adjusted. Some concessions were made by the Porte with respect to commerce, and some new regulations made in favour of its Christian subjects. On the other hand Russia relaxed in some matters with respect to the Crimea, and the provinces of Moldavia, and Wallachia and obtained satisfaction in others. The new khan of the Tartars was acknowledged by the Porte, and the apparent independency of the Crimea confirmed on both sides. The empress of Russia had an opportunity of displaying her usual magnificence by the splendid presents which she made to the French and Turkish ministers, as well as to Stachief, her own resident at Constantinople, who received the valuable, but in other countries unheard of, gift of a thousand peasants, a kind of gift, which includes also the land they cultivate and inhabit. Upon the whole, this convention seemed to have afforded considerable satisfaction to both parties, nor had any matter of complaint or dispute since

arisen on either side. By this arrangement the Porte had time to breathe and settle its affairs. With respect to Russia, it afforded her leisure to direct her attention to her constant object, that of displaying her authority by becoming an arbiter in the public affairs of Europe; although, perhaps, the means of her becoming the greatest monarchy in the universe (if she was not already such) do not lie on the side of Europe."

Upon the breaking out of the war between Great Britain and the Dutch republic, Catherine in vain attempted to mediate between the two powers.

In 1782, the empress sent a letter to the pope, requesting an establishment of the Jesuits in her dominions. "The motives," said Catherine, "by which I have been led to grant my protection to the Jesuits are founded on reason and equity, as well as on the hope that they will prove useful to my people. That company of peaceable and harmless men shall live in my empire, because of all the catholic societies it is the best qualified to instruct my subjects, and to inspire them with the sentiments of humanity, and the true principles of the religion of Christ."

The Roman pontiff complied with her request, and issued a brief, confirming the society of the Jesuits in the dominions of the empress of Russia. Another idea more worthy of her genius and talent was to erect a splendid memorial of her illustrious predecessor, Peter the Great. She resolved to erect an equestrian statue of that sovereign. For this purpose she wrote to an artist of pre-eminent abilities, named Falconet, who resided at Paris. He



sketched a design of having for the pedestal of this statue a huge rock, to indicate to posterity whence the heroic legislator had set out, and what obstacles he had. Near the village of Lachta, in Karclia, a rock was found in a vast morass, not far from a bay formed by the Gulf of Finland. This immense mass of stone was removed to Petersburg, being brought a distance of 41,250 English feet. Falconet executed the statue with exquisite skill, and consummate taste.

“Russia now beheld the rapid increase of the advantages arising from her late conquests. Her commerce on the Euxine was making fresh progress from day to day. The Russian vessels passed the Dardanelles, and proceeded to trade at Aleppo, at Smyrna, and in the ports of Italy. The delicious wines of Greece were brought into White Russia, and from thence were sent over all Poland.

“Catherine had recently caused the foundations to be laid of the city of Kerson, on the shores of the Dnieper, at the distance of about ten leagues from Otchkakoff; and prince Potemkin accelerated the works with incredible activity. He was frequently seen to set out from Petersburg, fly as it were to the banks of the Dnieper, and make his appearance again on those of the Neva, in less time than would be requisite for an ordinary man to perform the journey to Moscow. Kerson already counted 40,000 persons, inhabitants within its walls; and from its yards were launched not only vessels for the purposes of commerce, but ships of war, destined to strike terror into the Ottoman empire.”

“ Fresh disputes arose between Russia and Turkey, and Catherine was resolved to gain possession of the Crimea. She sent reinforcements to her armies in Poland and the Ukraine. The divan dispatched a pacha to take possession of the isle of Taman. General Balmain made himself master of the town of Keffa, and made the Tartar inhabitants take the oath of allegiance to the empress of Russia. Suwarrow was sent against the Tartars of Kuban and the Budziaks, while prince Potemkin was engaged in reducing other hordes of Tartars.

The courts of Vienna and Petersburg now sent ministers to Constantinople, demanding on the part of the former, the full restitution of all that had been ceded by the treaty of Belgrade, requiring possession of that city, with a considerable part of the provinces of Wallachia, Servia, and Bosnia, the free navigation of the Danube and of the Turkish seas ; Russia demanded the full possession of the Crimea, the isle of Taman, and the fortress of Otchakoff.

The most formidable preparations were made in Germany and Russia for war, while the most active measures were pursued to place the Ottoman empire in a defensive state. The eyes of all Europe were fixed upon this great and mighty struggle between the three belligerent powers.

“ A treaty of some sort, either of commerce, alliance, or both, was about this time concluded between Spain and the Porte; the object of this treaty on one side was, an engagement entered into by the other, that no Russian fleet beyond a certain specified number should in future be permitted to enter



the Mediterranean on terms of hostility. The Porte, however, surrounded almost as she was by her formidable enemies, had still one consolation in reserve: she knew that as France was now disengaged from the war with England, she would not be abandoned to absolute destruction by all the Western powers. Nor was it to be supposed, that the king of Prussia, or even Sweden, could have been a silent or inactive spectator of so great an accession of power, as the spoils of the Ottoman empire would afford to their already too formidable neighbours. At all events the Porte prepared vigorously for war." (*Life of Catherine II.* vol. iii. p. 96.)

The usurpation of the Crimea was an act which Catherine thought it expedient to justify by a public manifesto, which was ably replied to by the Porte, who it is reported employed Sir Robert Ainslie the English ambassador at Constantinople to draw up that state paper. The empress now directed her views to Sweden, and she requested to have an interview with Gustavus III. She accordingly met the Swedish monarch at Frederiksham: she had in her train, exclusive of her ministers, the princess Daschkoff and the favourite Lauskoi. Catherine requested Gustavus to remain neuter during the war with Turkey, assuring him that after it was ended she would assist him in gaining possession of Norway. The interview terminated in the most friendly and amicable manner. By the mediation of Austria and France, hostilities were once more prevented taking place between Russia and Turkey. By a new treaty it was definitively agreed upon, that the empress should retain the sovereignty of the Crimea,

of the Isle of Taman, and a great part of the Kuban, and the Turks acknowledged the right which she pretended incontestibly to have to the dominion of the Euxine, and to the passage of the Dardanelles. Thus Catherine acquired, without the necessity of going to war, a vast territory, and one million, five hundred thousand new subjects. Count Panin and Prince Orloff both died in 1784; the latter in a situation of horror and despair. "The bleeding shade of Peter III. pursued him into every retreat, haunted his affrighted mind by day, and scared him in the visions of the night. He beheld it incessantly aiming at him an avenging dart, and he expired in the agonies of despair."

Catherine experienced not a little chagrin at the increasing popularity of Frederick the Great, king of Prussia, and the magnitude of his power. That monarch had recently infringed upon the privileges of the city of Dantzic. The magistrates of that place applied to the empress to mediate in their behalf, and her interference procured redress.

The emperor Joseph the Second had at this time (1784) projected the design of opening the Scheldt. The United Provinces viewed this measure as being highly prejudicial to their commercial interests. Catherine declared, that she would support the emperor, her friend and ally.

While negotiations were pending between the Dutch and Austria, relative to the free navigation of this famous river, the emperor ordered two vessels, one to sail down the Scheldt from Antwerp to the sea, and the other up the river from the sea on its

(15, 16.) 2 a



course from Ostend to that city. The former was opposed in its course by a broadside from a Dutch cutter, while that from Ostend was stopped in its passage, but no act of hostility was committed. In consequence of this conduct of the states of Holland, Joseph ordered his ambassador to quit the Hague. Russia espoused the cause of Austria, Prussia and Sweden were favourably disposed to the Dutch, and jealous of the increasing power of Catherine. Amidst these events of public interest, a private event overwhelmed the empress with grief. This was the death of her favourite Lanskoï, who died in the arms of her majesty.

“ When he was no more, she gave herself up to the most poignant sorrow. The imperial apartments, from the abodes of joy, resembled now the lonely desert. Catherine refused all sustenance for several days, and remained three months without going out of her palace of Zarsko Celo.

“ Prince Potemkin took upon him to dispel the grief of Catherine. He was almost the only person who could presume to penetrate the solitude in which she passed her hours. His influence with her increased from day to day, and whether from gratitude or from real attachment, she resolved it is said to bind him to her by indissoluble ties, and secretly gave him her hand.

“ The bonds of wedlock were unable to fix either the taste of Potemkin or the fancy of Catherine. He soon set himself free from the obligations this tie imposes, and delegated them to a younger and more ardent favourite.”

The marriage above mentioned has justly been called in question as to its credibility, and we are inclined to doubt the fact.

In 1785, a negotiation was set on foot for exchanging the duchy of Bavaria for the Austrian Netherlands. This was well calculated to augment the already predominant power of Austria. The empress of Russia was friendly to the proposed measure, and actually sent a letter to the duke of Deixponts to induce him to acquiesce in it, but the duke returned an answer not conformable to the wishes of Catherine, and the king of Prussia strongly remonstrated against the measure. That great monarch invited all the electors of the German empire to unite in opposing what, if carried into operation, would be highly injurious to the whole Germanic constitution, and the king of Great Britain, in his capacity of elector of Hanover, was the first to set the example of opposition to the projected new arrangement. A commercial treaty had existed between England and Russia, and the former power desirous of renewing the treaty, appointed Mr. Fitzherbert, now Lord St. Helen's, to manage that business with the court of Petersburg. In consequence of the late conduct of his Britannic majesty, relative to Austria, Catherine purposely delayed renewing the treaty. In a conversation between Prince Potemkin and the French minister, the Count de Segur, the latter expatiated on the advantages which must accrue from a commercial connection between France and Russia; and his ideas appeared to the prince so judicious, that he desired him to commit them to writing, and they proved the



basis of a commercial treaty soon after formed between France and Russia. A treaty of a similar nature was concluded also with Germany, in which the inhabitants of that country were allowed great privileges, one of which was an exemption from all duties in the port of Riga.

Catherine, while thus extending her commercial relation, promoted the emigration of foreigners to her dominions, by adopting a system of enlarged toleration in matters of religion.

“ Not only the conquered provinces were protected in the free exercise of their religion, but Lutherans, Calvinists, Moravians, Papists, Mahometans, Heathens, and people of all countries and persuasions, might aspire to any post under government, and hold any civil or military employment or dignity if they were worthy, or deemed worthy of it.” Of the effects of this toleration, many curious instances have been related. A respectable Russian clergyman committed the education of his daughter to a Lutheran minister. For several years the reformed Lutheran ministers, some of the Calvinists also, and the English chaplain, held weekly meetings alternately at each other's houses, to discourse on theological subjects, &c. and they were frequently joined by some of the Roman Catholic and Russian clergy. A Lutheran minister appeared also as a sponsor to a Roman Catholic child. The empress once a year gave a grand dinner to ecclesiastics of all communions, which she called “ The Toleration dinner.”

Joseph the Second had established Normal schools throughout Germany, and Catherine pro-

cured from him the necessary instructions for erecting them in her dominions.

The Kuban Tartars having in the latter part of the year 1785 revolted, they were nearly cut to pieces by the Russian forces. Among the insurgents was a famous Tartar prophet named Mansow: he was at the head of seven or eight thousand of his followers, but his army was totally defeated and himself wounded, although not made a prisoner. In the room of Lanskoï, Potemkin had introduced a new favourite of the name of Yermaloff. (This circumstance alone shews the improbability of a secret marriage between the empress and the prince.) He soon in consequence of his excessive jealousy was deprived of the place which he held in the affections of Catherine. He behaved with base ingratitude to his patron. "Potemkin being reproved by her majesty, felt himself so hurt by it, that he haughtily said to her, "Madam, there is but one alternative, you must either dismiss Yermaloff or me, for so long as you keep that white negro, I shall not set my foot within the palace." The same day Yermaloff received orders to travel.

To increase the population of her new town of Kerson, she published an ukase, inviting foreigners to come and fix their residence, as also to settle in the provinces of Caucasus and Taurida. In another public declaration addressed both to the inhabitants of Russia and Russia Tartary, in which she desired them in future to call themselves her *subjects*, but not as had been customary, her *slaves*. The empress had resolved to make a journey to Kerson, at which place she was to hold a conference with the



emperor of Germany and the king of Poland. On this journey Catherine set out, January 18, 1787. She was attended by the ladies of her court, several of her ministers, and the French and Austrian ambassadors, as also the English envoy. "The sledges travelled night and day. A great number of horses had been previously collected at every station, great fires were lighted at the distance of every thirty fathom, and an immense crowd of persons, attracted by curiosity, skirted the road." From Smolensko she proceeded on to Kief, where she was joined by a great number of her nobles, among whom were Marshal Romanzoff and Prince Potemkin. There were on the river Dnieper a fleet of fifty magnificent galleys. This fleet all anchored at Kanieff, having the empress on board. Stanislaus, who like a vassal sovereign made his appearance under the title of Count Poniatowsky, immediately went on board the imperial galley, and had a conference with Catherine. After the conference ended, she invested the king with the order of St. Andrew. At Kremenshuk the empress landed, and took up her abode in a house magnificently prepared for her reception.

The emperor of Germany arrived at Kerson, under his travelling title of Count Falkenstein, prior to the arrival of his imperial friend, who had embarked for Kaidah, at which place she landed, and joined by the emperor, she proceeded by land to Kerson. There she found the harbour full of vessels, and a man of war of 66 guns was launched from the dock yard in her presence. Passing through the streets of the town, she observed over

a gate an inscription in Greek in these words: "This is the way which leads to Byzantium." Kerson was full of persons of all countries, English, French, Greeks, Poles, Spaniards, Tartars, &c. Among the French was Alexander Lameth, afterward a distinguished actor in the French revolution. General Miranda also, so famous for his spirit of military enterprise, was presented by Prince Potemkin to Catherine. While at Kerson, four Turkish ships of war anchored at the mouth of the Boristhenes. The very sight of them made the empress uneasy. While Joseph was on this visit, he received intelligence of an insurrection having broke out in Brabant. The emperor notwithstanding followed the course of Catherine, who travelled to the interior of the Crimea. An immense body of Tartars escorted her along the road to Bachtskircic, which she entered with great magnificence.

"On her way back, the empress was conducted to Pultava. On her reaching that place two armies appeared. They approached, they engaged, and gave Catherine an exact representation of the famous battle in which Charles XII. was completely routed by Peter the Great." The emperor Joseph took leave of the empress Catherine at Moscow, and the latter travelled on to Petersburg.

Potemkin was anxious to sow differences between Russia and the Ottoman Porte, and he so far succeeded as to occasion a memorial from the grand vizier to the Russian minister, which, after stating various grievances, closed with the grand seignior demanding power to appoint in the Russian dominions, agents to protect the commerce of his sub-



jects. Bulgakoff, the Russian ambassador, requested time to send to his court for an answer, but this was refused, war was declared, and Bulgakoff was imprisoned in the castle of seven towers. "The inter nuncio of the court of Vienna, and the ambassador of France, united their efforts with the divan to obtain the release of Bulgakoff. All their endeavours were fruitless. The minister of Great Britain had at that time more influence than they, and entered warmly into the resentment of his court, which had beheld with a jealous eye the empire of Russia forming a treaty of commerce with France.

"The Turks began to make preparations for war with the greatest alacrity. They ordered 80,000 men to march to cover Otchakoff. Dispatches were forwarded to every part of the empire to prepare for war. A formidable army advanced to the shores of the Danube, and the grand vizier was in readiness to unfurl the standard of Mohammed at the head of the Ottoman troops.

"The people had been outrageous with government for its supineness in suffering the empress to prosecute her journey to Kerson. Indeed all Europe was surprised at the forbearance of the Porte, if war was determined, in not obstructing that boasted and insulting progress, or in fact, vain glorious triumph."

The grand vizier was entrusted with an authority as absolute as that of the sultan himself, and as a testimony of the high confidence he reposed in him, he received as a present, a magnificent gold hilted sabre, richly adorned with diamonds. The capudan

pasha, who had eminently distinguished himself in the war in the Crimea, was appointed grand admiral of the fleet, and generalissimo of all the armies to be employed on the Euxine. His squadron consisted of sixteen ships of the line, eight frigates, and several galleys. The Greeks subject to the Turkish power being suspected as to their fidelity were disarmed; while the Russian Tartars were exhorted to return to their allegiance, and flock to the standard of the prophet. On the other hand, Catherine used every means of securing the services of her new but conquered subjects. She caused the koran to be printed in their language and mosque's to be erected; but they were writhing under the yoke of bondage, and only waited an opportunity for emancipating themselves. They accordingly elected a khan, who had under him in a very short time an army of 40,000 men as an auxiliary to the Turkish forces. Notwithstanding these formidable appearances, the empress had little to fear. A Turkish and a Tartar army were in every respect inferior to a Russian army, which had now arrived to a fine state of discipline. Prince Potemkin, who had already acquired blooming laurels in the field of battle, had under him Suwarrow, Repnin, Kamenskoi, all military officers of consummate skill and undaunted courage.

The empress had a powerful ally in her friend the emperor of Germany, who assembled an army of 80,000 men, who marched into Moldavia to assist the Russians. In answer to the Ottoman manifesto, she published two, one of which closed in the following manner:

“The Porte has had the arrogance to insist on a  
(15, 16.) 2 R



categorical answer to its absurd demands. The empress therefore is constrained to repel the aggression of the enemy of the Christian name, having armed herself with confidence under the protection of that righteous God, who has so long and so powerfully protected the Russian empire."

Hostilities commenced with the Sheik Mansour, who assumed the formidable character of a prophet, and affirmed, that an angel had appeared to him in the midst of a wood, encouraging him to raise against the Russians all the hordes of Mount Caucasus. Mansour entered the Russian frontiers with an army of 8000 men. Upon his approach, Prince Potemkin divided his army into four columns, which he ordered to march different routes. That commanded by General Rebinder came up with the enemy, October 1, 1787. The sheik was encamped with about 600 Tartars. The Russians fell upon them with the utmost fury, and so great a carnage was made, that 400 Tartars were left dead on the spot. Mansour was not disheartened by this defeat; he rallied his troops, and on the next morning renewed the attack; "They were however repulsed. The carabineers of Rosten, the dragoons of Astrakan, and a battalion of grenadiers, carrying off the chief honours of the day. It seemed rather singular in this encounter, that the Tartars should have hoped, by a feigned flight, to draw an enemy, so far their superior in the art of war, into an ambuscade. It is certainly a curious, though by no means a pleasing spectacle, to behold the vigorous though ineffectual struggles of brave men, against a vast superiority of power, arms, and discipline."

The Tartars having been reinforced, a third action took place, in which they were again defeated by Prince Radischeff. The dwelling of the sheik and all the Tartar villages were plundered and burnt. Ten thousand pints of butter and a large quantity of barley formed the booty taken by the Russians. While the arms of Russia were thus victorious by land, the Turkish fleet, from which so much had been expected, sailed home without making any attempt upon the Russian fleet, or performing any operation whatever. The vice-admiral was immediately put to death. In an attack upon Kinburn by a body of 5000 Turks, the garrison sallied out and put the besiegers to rout, four thousand Turks being put to the sword.

“The empress earnestly solicited the ambassador of France to engage his court to join her for the dismemberment of the Ottoman empire. In return for this service she offered to cede to France the possession of Egypt, of the conquest of which she thought herself secure; but the ambassador was averse from trusting to the specious bait. He knew that if Turkey was to be partitioned, Egypt would be less desirable to the French than the isle of Candia. He knew, that though it would be advantageous for France to have a treaty of commerce with the Russians, it was greatly more to her interest to prevent the demolition of the Turks, with whom she was engaged in a more safe, more lucrative, and more convenient commerce. In short, he knew that the inefficient government of Constantinople could never, like that of Petersburg, threaten to disarrange the equilibrium of Europe. Besides what right had



Catherine to reckon the submission of Egypt? Her consul-general, it is true, maintained several correspondencies there. He had secured the beys Ibrahim and Amurath in his interest; but the temptations which he threw out to another bey named Ismael, were not attended with the same success. Ismael caused him to be arrested, and sent him to the pasha of Cairo, who detained him prisoner."

A great coolness had for some time prevailed between the courts of Stockholm and Petersburg. Gustavus the Third, before the Turks had declared war against Russia, had concluded a treaty with them. He was assisted with money by Prussia, and was guaranteed the assistance of a fleet from England. The Russian minister was ordered to leave Stockholm. Hostilities commenced by Gustavus marching his troops against Fredericksham. Catherine was not a little alarmed at the operations of the king of Sweden, but she well knew how to conceal her fears. One day the French ambassador entering the palace, Catherine asked him, "What news?" "That you, Madam, are going to set out for Moscow," said he. "You did not believe it?" replied the empress, "I have given orders for a great number of post horses to be kept in readiness, but it is for the purpose of conveying soldiers and artillery." The arrival of Gustavus in Finland excited great apprehensions for the safety of Petersburg. "The younger branches of the imperial family were removed to Moscow, but the empress, with her usual magnanimity, waited unappalled to face the tempest. All the Cossacks within reach were hastily collected to be turned loose as oppor-

tunity served upon the Swedish provinces; and Admiral Grieg sailed with a strong fleet from Cronstadt to counteract the designs of the enemy by sea, on which side only they could yet menace Petersburg." In addition to this fleet, another was fitted out for the Euxine, the command of which was given to the prince of Nassau, who had been in the service of France.

Paul Jones, a desperate pirate, who had made great depredations upon the English commerce during the American war, made an offer of his services to the empress of Russia, who received him in the most gracious manner, and immediately gave him a high command in the fleet which lay at Cronstadt, but he was soon after ordered as second in command to the fleet destined for the Euxine, of which the Prince of Nassau was admiral; but a scandalous amour excited such a spirit of antipathy to him, that he was obliged precipitately to quit the Russian service.

The Turkish fleet having made an attempt to force the passage of the Dnieper, it was successfully opposed by the Prince of Nassau. Admiral Greig, in pursuit of the Swedish fleet, came up with it off the island of Hoogland. "The action did not commence till five o'clock in the afternoon, and in two hours so many ships were disabled on both sides, that they were mutually obliged to lay by and refit in order to prepare for a renewal. No scene was ever less calculated for the action and evolutions of two such numerous fleets composed of great and heavy ships. A narrow sea, every where studded with innumerable islands, rocks, and shoals.



intermixed with deceitful channels, and rendered more dangerous by violent, irregular and jarring currents. Nor were the climate and face of the heavens more favourable; overcast skies, frequently a foggy and generally hazy air, with sudden tempestuous squalls, and unexpected dead calms, were among the inconveniences which seemed to set seamanship and naval skill at defiance. Indeed such an exhibition in such a situation, seemed scarcely less than an outrage upon nature. At eight o'clock the battle was renewed with apparently a fresh accession of rage on both sides. Nothing could exceed the dreadful violence of the action, or the fury and determined obstinacy with which it was maintained. The darkness was so great, that the knowledge of each ship was in a great measure confined to her own sphere of action, so that, ignorant and heedless of what was passing elsewhere, she fought as if all depended upon herself individually, and as if victory or destruction were the only alternatives. The victory, as is usually the case in actions not apparently and absolutely decisive, was claimed by both fleets, as a flag ship had been taken on each side. Admiral Greig, from the accession of fresh ships and the nearness of the great naval magazines and arsenals, was enabled, in less time than seemed credible, to put again to sea with greater force than before. He suddenly fell upon the Swedes in the road of Sveaborg, in Finland, where they were as unapprehensive of an attack, as they were from situation and circumstances incapable of defence. He attacked them furiously in this moment of consternation and sur-

prise, and, during the disorder occasioned by their endeavours to get within the protection of their forts, the Gustavus Adolphus of sixty guns, seemed a sacrifice destined to the security of the rest: she was taken and burnt by the Russians.

“ From this time to the end of the campaign, the Swedes continued shut up in the harbour of Sveaburg, being precluded even from the means of refitting, while the Russian fleet rode the triumphant mistress of all the seas within the Sound; nor was it long before a numerous flotilla of small vessels laden with provisions for the army in Finland, as well as for the fleet, through the fatal lack of protection, became a prey to the enemy.” (*Life of the Empress Catherine II.* vol. iii. p. 290—292.)

No sooner had the news of these brilliant successes reached Petersburg, than Catherine wrote a letter of thanks to Admiral Greig, and granted him a large estate in Livonia, with a considerable sum of money. Greig (who was a native of Scotland) died shortly after, and was buried with great magnificence and splendour. Gustavus, notwithstanding the ill success of the campaign, made overtures for peace; but the terms he proposed were so exorbitant, as to cause the empress to exclaim—“ What language! If the king of Sweden was already at Moscow, I should even then shew him what a woman like me is able to do, standing on the ruins of a mighty empire.”

The king of Sweden was yet before Fredericksham; but a spirit of disaffection prevailed in his army, and the officers refused to lead the men on to the attack. The Danes at this time had made



an irruption into some of the finest provinces of Sweden, and Gustavus, chagrined and disappointed, was obliged to abandon the siege, and left his brother, the Duke of Ostrogothia, to head the army in Finland.

The Russian arms were crowned with great success in their operations against the Turks and Tartars. The fleet in the Euxine fell in with that of the Turks, forming sixteen ships of the line, and obliged it to sheer off. An engagement took place on June 18, 1788, between the two fleets, when, after an action of five hours, the Turks were obliged to retire. Three of their gallies were sunk. The Russians lost not a single vessel. Captain Fanshaw, an English officer, eminently distinguished himself in this battle, as did also the Prince of Nassau, the Russian admiral. The Kuban Tartars were defeated by General Talusin.

Prince Potemkin, with an immense army, was engaged in the siege of Otchakoff. "Fortifications of uncommon strength, an abundant supply of ammunition, a numerous garrison, and the severity of the season, seemed necessarily to render this place impregnable. The besiegers suffered so greatly from cold, that they had been obliged to dig subterranean huts to screen themselves from its fatal effects. Being likewise in want of provisions, they died in great numbers every night. But the frost, which caused them so much trouble to resist, assisted them in taking the town. Observing that it was open to attack on the side of the Liman, where it was less fortified, and where the ice facilitated access to it, Prince Potemkin suddenly sent

orders to command the assault, and while he remained in his camp with his mistresses, his Lieutenants, at the head of a party of troops, rushed into the town, and spread carnage and desolation on every side. It is not however to be thought that Prince Potemkin was detained by any suggestions of fear; for, several days before, he had passed many times to and fro with the utmost coolness under the very cannon of the ramparts, because he had learnt that some one or other had dared to suspect his courage. He absented himself from the assault of Otchakoff for no other reason, than that it did not present him with an opportunity for distinguishing himself in an extraordinary manner." The town was entered sword in hand by Prince Anhalt-Bernburg at the head of the grenadiers and chasseurs. The Turks behaved with great bravery. A dreadful slaughter was made by the Russians. The town was given up to plunder. The scenes of riot and slaughter lasted three days, and 25,000 Turks were put to death. The Russians lost 12,000 men.

In 1789, an engagement took place between the Russian gallies under Prince Nassau, and a flotilla of Swedish gallies near Rogensalm, in which the Russians were victorious. Another victory by land was gained by the Russian general Numsen, over the Swedish army. The year following (1790) the galley fleet of Sweden again set sail in quest of the Prince of Nassau, Gustavus himself being on board. The fleets having met, a desperate battle ensued, in which the Russian fleet was defeated with the  
(15, 16.)



loss of thirty vessels. The Swedish grand fleet, commanded by the Duke of Sudermania, followed the Russian squadron into the port of Reval, and the galley fleet, with his Swedish majesty on board, sailed into the gulph of Viborg. A favourable opportunity now offered itself for the destruction of the navy of Sweden, and the capture of the king, but the opportunity was strangely neglected. Admiral Tschitschagoff, who commanded a Russian fleet far more numerous than that of the Swedes, forgot to place batteries in those two passages by which alone the enemy could make his escape. The Swedes attempted to set fire to the Russian fleet. This idea was proposed by the gallant Sir Sidney Smith, who was then with the king of Sweden. The fire ship, striking upon a sand bank, did no harm to the Russian ships, but accidentally set fire to some Swedish vessels, and nine ships of the line, three frigates, and upwards of twenty gallies, fell into the hands of the Russians. This success was, notwithstanding, followed by a disastrous event. The Swedish gallies retired behind the rocks of Schvenko-fund. The Prince of Nassau immediately attacked the Swedes, but was defeated with very great loss; half of his fleet being destroyed, and ten thousand men killed. The advantage thus gained by the Swedish gallies was entirely owing to the unskilfulness of the Prince of Nassau, yet that naval commander had the arrogance to write the following letter to the empress after his defeat:

"MADAM,

"I HAVE had the misfortune to fight against the elements, the Swedes, and the Russians. I hope that your majesty will do me justice."

The empress returned the following answer :

"PRINCE,

"You are in the right, because I am resolved you shall be so. This is highly aristocratic, but it is therefore suitable to the country in which we live. Depend always on your affectionate

"CATHERINE."

The Prince of Nassau afterwards quitted the service of Russia for that of Prussia. The battle of Schvenko-fund proved the means of accelerating a peace. Gustavus had suffered grievously by the war, and he was well aware that the late victory was caused solely by the incapacity of the Russian admiral. Preliminaries were entered into, and the empress asked nothing more than the re-establishment of the treaties of Neustadt and Abo. The treaty was signed at Varela, August 14, 1790.

While the war with the Ottoman Porte was carrying on, Achmet the Fourth died, and was succeeded by his nephew, Selim the Third. The storming of Otechakoff impressed the empress with sentiments of gratitude to the commanders of her victorious army. To Prince Potemkin, her favourite, the commander in chief, she sent a present



of 100,000 rubles, with a marshal's truncheon set with diamonds and entwined with a branch of laurel, the leaves of which were gold. He was also made Hetman of the Cossacks. Prince Repnin and General Suwarrow were presented with gold hilted swords set with diamonds: the latter, in addition, received a magnificent plume of brilliants to wear on his hat. "Estates, lots of peasants, and sums of money, were distributed to the other commanders. Gold hilted swords were showered upon the other officers, down to the rank of lieutenant-colonel and major. The widow of an artillery colonel who was slain in the attack, was, with her children, consoled with a good estate. Promotion was extended to officers of a lower order; and even the non-commissioned subalterns and common soldiers who had entered Otchakoff, were ornamented with silver medals." The Russian army continued to cover itself with glory. Potemkin took the isle of Beresan. Repnin drove the Turks from the shores of the Solska, while the intrepid Suwarrow gained a complete victory over them at Fokshani. The auxiliary army of the Austrians, commanded by the Prince of Saxe-Cobourg, being in danger of being overpowered by the army of the grand vizier, Suwarrow, after his victory, marched with 8000 men to the relief of the Austrian general. The Austrians were then flying before the Turks. Suwarrow arrived at this critical period, and galloping along the lines, he cried out to his troops: "My friends, never look at the eyes of your enemies; fix your view at their breasts: it is there that you must thrust your bayonets." His men immediately

charged with tremendous fury, and the Turks were overthrown with immense carnage. This great battle was fought near the river Rymniks, in consequence of which the hero received the additional name of Rymnikshy, and he was created a count of the holy Roman, and also of the Russian empire. Soon after Suwarrow captured Tutukay in Bulgaria, and transmitted the following laconic note to his royal mistress:

"Glory to God! Praises to Catherine! Tutukay is taken! Suwarrow is in it."

Prince Potemkin took Bender and laid siege to Ismail. Seven months had his army encamped before the walls of that place, when one day a female favourite, Madam de Witt, pretended to prognosticate, by a pack of cards, that he would take the town at the end of three weeks; Potemkin smiled and replied: "That he had a method of divination far more infallible." He immediately sent orders to Suwarrow to take Ismail by storm. That general drew up his soldiers, and thus addressed them: "My brothers, no quarter! provisions are dear!" The assault then commenced. Twice were the Russians repulsed, but renewed the attack with redoubled vigour. At length a breach was made, and the Russians entered the town, and the slaughter was immense. Fifteen thousand Russians perished on this occasion. Suwarrow then wrote as follows to the empress: "The haughty Ismail is at your feet." The first time Sir Charles (now Lord) Whitworth appeared at the empress's levee, she said to him sarcastically: "Sir, since the king, your master, is determined to drive



me out of Petersburg, I hope he will permit me to retire to Constantinople."

Upon Prince Potemkin's return to Petersburg, the empress received him with the most extravagant emotions of joy. Catherine gave him another palace contiguous to his own, and a coat laced with diamonds. The author of the "Life of Catherine the Second," relates that Potemkin "was eager to procure the most costly things of every kind. He had ten or a dozen violins of exorbitant price, yet he never played on a violin in his life; and they were all either spoiled by the dust or gnawed by the rats, for after the moment he bought them he never saw them more." Somebody speaking before him of a library, Prince Potemkin said: "He had one of greater value than the most learned man in Europe could shew, and opening a book-case, there appeared several shelves of books, which on being taken down, were seen to be nothing more than boxes gilt and lettered at the backs, and filled with bank assignats and rouleau's of imperials and ducats to an amazing amount." From the same author we also extract a most interesting account of an unprecedented splendid entertainment he gave after the taking of Ismail.

"A whole month was consumed in preparations. Artists of all kinds were employed. Whole shops and warehouses were emptied to supply the necessities of the occasion. Several hundred persons were daily assembled in making previous rehearsals for the private execution; and each of these days was of itself a grand spectacle. At length the moment arrived which had kept the whole public

on the utmost stretch of expectation, by the great preparations that were making for it. Notice had been given that the empress and the imperial family would honour this day by their presence. The court, the foreign ministers, the nobility, and a great part of the people of condition in the city were invited. The company began to assemble in masquerade dresses at six in the evening. When the empress got into her carriage, on a signal being made, the treat for the populace was opened in the public place before the palace. High piles of clothes of all the various articles, lofty pyramids of eatables, and a competent supply of liquors were here surrendered to the general scramble.

“On her majesty’s entering the vestibule of the palace, the loud music suddenly struck up from the lofty gallery, resounding through the grand saloon and the spacious halls. The orchestra consisted of 600 performers, and instruments and voices produced their alternate effects. In a few minutes afterwards the empress advanced to the grand saloon, attended by the brilliant concourse, and took her seat upon a gentle elevation, decorated with transparent representations. The company divided among the colonades and into the boxes; and now began the second scene of this uncommon entertainment. Four and twenty of the most beautiful youth of both sexes of noble families, among whom were also the grand dukes Alexander and Constantine, opened the dances with a quadrille. All were dressed in white, and only distinguishable by the colours of their girdles and scarfs. The value of their dresses was estimated at ten million of rubles.



The music to which they danced was accompanied with singing, and the famous Le Picque concluded the scene with a solo.

“The company now proceeded to another hall, hung with tapestry of the richest and most costly kind. Here stood an artificial elephant, decorated with emeralds and rubies. The Persian who conducted him struck upon a bell, and this was the signal for another change.

“A curtain flew up as if by magic, and opened to view a magnificently decorated theatre, where two ballets and a dramatic piece afforded entertainment to the spectators with their extraordinary excellence. The most complete and charming music, interrupted by choirs of singers, numerous sets of fine dancers, a prodigious display of pomp, and the sight of an exceeding great diversity of national dresses in their most pleasing costume, now delighted every sense at once. When the play was over, the company divided into the several rooms of the palace. Which ever way the spectator turned his eye, the magnificent illuminations struck him with amazement. The walls and the columns all seemed to glow with various coloured fire. Large mirrors here and there judiciously fixed to the sides of the apartments, or made to form pyramids and grottos, multiplied the effect of this singular exhibition, and even made the whole inclosure from top to bottom, seem to be composed of sparkling stones.

“A table suitable to the magnificence of the festivity, now waited for the company. Six hundred persons sat down to it, and the rest were entertained at side boards. No other table furniture was seen

upon the cloth but gold and silver. Instead of the usual candlesticks, the table was lighted by various coloured vases in which lamps were inserted. An astonishing number of servants and domestic officers in superb dresses were employed in waiting on the guests; and in every place any thing was to be had at the first nod. Nothing the most studied epicurism was able to procure could be asked for in vain.

“ The empress on this day, certainly the first time for many years, made an exception to her general rule, by staying till midnight, in order not to disturb the pleasure of the host and his company. On her entering the vestibule again, the choir of voices melodiously chanted a hymn to Catherine’s praise. Her majesty, surprised and affected, was turning round to the prince, when overpowered with his emotions he fell on his knee, and seizing her hand bedewed it with tears. Some gloomy forebodings seemed to shake his whole frame, and his countenance was expressive of the sentiment that this was the last time that he should ever on that spot express his gratitude to his magnanimous mistress.”

Potemkin had lately evinced a great languor and depression of spirits. He would often order a black velvet to be spread on the table, and having his diamonds brought, he would amuse himself for hours in placing them one after another in the forms of circles, crosses, and other fanciful shapes; and he would trifle away hours in other puerile amusements in which his mind appeared absorbed.

One day he required an attendant to read Plu-  
(17, 18.)



tarch's Lives to him. At the life of Agesilaus, and the account of his conquests, he interrupted the reader, and after a pause he said to him, "Think you that I could go at some future period to Constantinople?" to which the reader replied: "If the sovereign pleases there is no impossibility to prevent your going." "That is enough, (returned Potemkin,) and if any one should come to day and tell me that I could not go thither, I would shoot myself through the head." He had even meditated an attack upon China. Preparations were actually made for taking possession of the Amoor at Nertshinsk, where the Russians have their gold and silver mines: the chief difficulty he had to encounter was the want of timber. It was his firm opinion, that a body of 10,000 Russians could march through China.

Notwithstanding the splendid banquet the prince had given to the empress, her heart was alienated from him. She had lavished her caresses upon a new favourite named Plato Zuboff.

The death of Joseph the Second, emperor of Germany, deprived Catherine of a valuable ally, for his successor Leopold, made peace with the Ottoman Porte. The empress prosecuted the war with energy and vigour. General Kutusoff defeated a large body of Turks and Tartars, while prince Repnin, with only 25,000 men, routed an Ottoman army of 70,000, and General Gudovitch, in the Crimea, took several fortresses and 14,000 prisoners, among whom was the Sheik Mansour, the celebrated prophet. At this period (1791) the court of St. James's sent Mr. Fawkeners to Petersburg, who was en-

trusted with two propositions, the latter of which (the most favourable to the interests of Russia) was not to be made unless the former was rejected. The clerk of the privy council was however induced, by the adroit manœuvres of Catherine, to make the latter proposition. By the intervention of the courts of Berlin, London, and the Hague, a definitive treaty of peace between Russia and the Porte was signed at Yassy. Prince Potemkin attended the congress, and was seized with an epidemical fever, which soon assumed a formidable appearance, and baffled every effort of medical skill. The empress sent immediately, upon being informed of his illness, two of her principal physicians; but Potemkin rejected their advice, and disdained to follow the regimen they prescribed. With an infuriated degree of disregard to his dangerous existing circumstances, he indulged in the most extravagant excesses of epicureanism.

“ His ordinary breakfast was the greater part of a smoke dried goose from Hamburg, slices of hung beef or ham, drinking with it a prodigious quantity of wine, and Dantzic liqueurs, and afterwards dined with equal rapacity. He never controlled his appetite in any kind of gratification.”

Such excesses must consequently have tended to accelerate the death of this celebrated man, which took place at Yassy, October 15, 1791. His remains were inhumed at Kerson with the greatest funeral pomp, and a magnificent mausoleum, by express order of Catherine, was erected on the spot where his remains were deposited.

We have had occasion to record some anecdotes



of this powerful favourite of the empress Catherine. The following will serve to evidence both his wit and presumption.

“Happening to be once summoned to council, while engaged at a party of cards, he refused to stir. The astonished messenger, unaccustomed to such an instance of disobedience, and afraid of being implicated in his guilt, humbly besought Potemkin to furnish him with an excuse. On this the favourite referred him to the Bible; and on being requested to mention the passage, he gaily replied: “In the first psalm, and the first verse, you will there find it written: “*Beatus vir qui non abiit in consilio impiorum.*” “Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly.” Potemkin had lost the sight of one eye, which so chagrined him, that he once formed the resolution of taking the cowl and turning monk; but he afterwards prudently changed his mind, which occasioned the following lines to be written:

“The devil was sick;—the devil a monk would be;

“The devil got well;—the devil a monk was he.”

It was not merely the loss of his eye, but his being also in a temporary state of disgrace, being banished for a short time to Smolensko, which inclined him to think of a monastery: but receiving a submissive letter, requesting his return to court, “The devil a monk was he.” The finest traits of the character of Prince Potemkin have been most ably pourtrayed by the Count de Segur, for some time ambassador at Petersburg. He closes a masterly review of his

genius and talents, his principles and his conduct, in the following words:

“Like the rapid passage of those shining meteors which astonish us by their lustre, but are as empty as air, Potemkin began every thing, completed nothing, disordered the finances, disorganised the army, depopulated his country, and enriched it with other deserts. The fame of the empress was increased by his conquests. The admiration they excited was for her, and the hatred they raised for her minister. Posterity, more equitable, will perhaps divide between them both the glory of the successes and the severity of the reproaches. It will not bestow on Potemkin the title of a great man, but it will mention him as an extraordinary person; and to draw his picture with accuracy, he might be represented as a real emblem, as the living image of the Russian empire.

“For in fact, he was colossal like Russia. In his mind, as in that country, were cultivated districts and desert plains. It also partook of the Asiatic, of the European, of the Tartarian, and the Cossack; the rudeness of the eleventh century and the corruption of the eighteenth; the surface of the arts and the ignorance of the cloisters; an outside of civilization and many traces of barbarism. In a word, if we might hazard so bold a metaphor, even his two eyes, the one open and the other closed, reminded us of the Euxine always open, and the Northern Ocean so long shut up with ice.

“This portrait may appear gigantic, but those who knew Potemkin will bear witness to its truth. That man had great defects, but without them, per-



haps, he would neither have got the mastery of his sovereign nor that of his country. He was made by chance precisely such as he ought to be for preserving so long his power over so extraordinary a woman."

In 1792, the empress commenced her long projected plan of the annihilation of Poland as a kingdom, by a solemn declaration of war against that devoted and ill fated country. The Poles sustained this unprovoked aggression with becoming fortitude; but they were peculiarly unfortunate in having their army under the command of Prince Joseph Poniatowsky, whose want of experience and incapability rendered him totally unfit for so important a situation. Immense armies of Russians ravaged and desolated the kingdom of Poland, which in vain attempted to oppose the overwhelming power of the Russians. The unfortunate Stanislaus was forced to submit to the most humiliating degradation, and was compelled to make a public declaration to his subjects, that it was requisite to yield to the superiority of the Russian arms.

On April 9, 1793, a manifesto was issued, in which the empress Catherine declared, that she would incorporate with her dominions, all the territory of Poland which her arms had conquered. The king of Prussia, in concert with Catherine, had already marched an army into Poland. At this time Thaddeus Kosciusko, a lieutenant in the army of Prince Poniatowsky, who had greatly distinguished himself by his patriotic attachment to his country, and his invincible hatred to the Russians, was called to take upon him the command of a

select small but valiant body of Poles. In 1794, Kosciusko arrived at Cracow, and was proclaimed general of the Polish army. Fighting with enthusiastic ardour, his little army completely routed seven thousand Russians, and this success occasioned an insurrection in Warsaw, in which two thousand Russians were put to death. On October 4, 1794, Kosciusko, after exciting his army to perform prodigies of valour, was totally defeated. Almost the whole of his army were either cut to pieces or obliged to lay down their arms: himself, being covered with wounds, fell senseless on the field of battle, and was taken prisoner.

The few who escaped from this scene of desolation retreated to Prague, to which city Suwarrow marched his victorious army. It was taken by storm, and a most horrible carnage ensued. Twenty thousand persons, without distinction of age or sex, were put to the sword. Weltering in the blood of the innocent, the barbarous conqueror, whose laurels were tarnished by his abominable cruelty, entered Warsaw, and thus did Catherine and Frederic-William become masters of Poland, which unhappy kingdom was divided between them. Stanislaus was sent a royal prisoner to Grodno, where he was allowed to reside upon a pension granted him by the Russian government. The brave Kosciusko was shut up in a dungeon at Petersburg.

A serious misunderstanding had long subsisted between the courts of Petersburg and Stockholm. Upon the assassination of Gustavus the Third, the Duke of Sudermania was appointed regent to the young king. He had projected a marriage between



his nephew and a princess of the house of Mecklenburg. The marriage was even agreed on, and the princess of Mecklenburg declared future queen of Sweden; but Catherine expressed great displeasure at this matrimonial negotiation, pretending that Gustavus III. had promised her the hand of his son for one of the young grand duchesses, and she looked upon the failure in the execution of that promise as a personal affront to her. When the Swedish ambassador was dispatched to Russia to announce the intended marriage of the young king, Catherine dispatched a courier to meet him on the borders of Finland, prohibiting him from entering Russia. General Budberg was in 1796, dispatched to Stockholm by the empress, requesting that the marriage between the king of Sweden and the princess of Mecklenburg might be set aside, and that one of her grand daughters might be substituted in her room: and also, that the arch-duchess should not be required to change her religion. Such was the immense influence of Catherine, that the princess of Mecklenburg was repudiated, and the young Gustavus Adolphus, in company with the regent and the minister, Count Reuterholm, paid a visit to the empress, and the day for the royal nuptials was fixed. Gustavus, upon perusing the articles of the marriage, to his great astonishment perceived that the Russian princess was to retain the profession of the religion of the Greek church; he therefore refused to sign them. It was in vain that Catherine endeavoured to persuade the young monarch to relinquish the point: he was inexorable, the matrimonial treaty was broken off, and the

regent, the king, and his retinue, quitted St. Petersburg.

The wide sphere of the empress's authority it might have been supposed would have been adequate to her ambition; but that predominant passion of her heart was not yet sufficiently gratified. She meditated annexing Courland and Semigalia to her dominions. Through her instigation the Duke of Courland was deprived of his authority, and the whole country became subject to Russia.

The empress had married her grandson Alexander (now emperor of all the Russias) to the princess Louisa, of Baden-Durlach. Anxious to procure a wife for his brother, the Grand Duke Constantine, she invited the three daughters of the Prince of Saxe-Cobourg, and the grand duke was married to the youngest of those princesses. The empress now cast her eyes towards Persia. To gain possession of those provinces which border on the Caspian, Zuboff, her favourite, with a numerous army, advanced into the province of Daghestan, and besieged Derbent, which speedily surrendered. It was a singular circumstance, that the commandant was the same person who had surrendered Derbent to Peter the Great. He was now at the advanced age of 120 years. Zuboff's career was timely checked by Aga Mahommed, who defeated him, and forced him to retreat to Derbent. Catherine was making fresh exertions for reinforcing her army in Persia, and had actually entered into a treaty with Austria and Great Britain against the Ottoman Porte, when her mighty projects were rendered abortive by the stroke of sudden death.



“ On the morning of the 9th of November, 1796, she was in good spirits, and took her coffee as usual. Some time after this she retired to her closet, where, after remaining a full half hour, the women who waited on her not seeing her return, began to be alarmed, and on entering the outer room in which it was, they found her stretched on the parquet, with her feet against the door, and speechless. Upon this, a messenger was dispatched to Dr. John Rogerson, her majesty's chief physician, who judging it to be a fit of apoplexy, ordered her twice to be let blood, on which the empress at first appeared to be somewhat relieved; but she was unable to utter a single word, and at ten o'clock in the evening of the following day she expired.

“ The grand duke was at his country palace of Gatshina, to which place an officer was sent off to apprise him of the danger of his mother. He repaired to Petersburg, and at the instant when she ceased to breathe, was proclaimed emperor by the name of Paul I.” *Life of the Empress Catherine II.* vol. iii. p. 426.

The character of this great and extraordinary sovereign is most ably sketched by the author of her *Life*, published in the *Annual Necrology*.

“ Her majesty in person was not above the middle size; but being well proportioned, and carrying her head high, she appeared tall. Her forehead was open, her nose aquiline, her mouth agreeable, and her chin, without being ugly, was rather long. Her hair, in which she took great delight, was auburn, and her eye-brows dark and thick. As to her eyes, we have different accounts. One gentleman, who

resided at her court a considerable time in a diplomatic capacity, (the Count de Segur,) describing them as blue, while another, (M. de Rulhiers,) insists they were of a brown hue. Upon the whole, her physiognomy was not deficient in expression, but she had such a command of her countenance, that no one could there discover the secrets of her heart.

“ Her imperial majesty was accustomed on great occasions to dress in a splendid manner, and to wear a profusion of jewels. Being particularly fond of diamonds she possessed a prodigious number, and one in particular was the largest that had ever been seen in Europe. It was presented to her by Count Orloff, who purchased it from an American for £104,166. Catherine, however, was accustomed in general to affect the ancient Russian fashions, for the most part wearing green out of compliment to the nation. Her hair was powdered but slightly. On the other hand her face was covered with rouge, and as her imperial majesty, like the ladies in the French court, wore it in proportion to her rank, it is not to be wondered if it was of a high colour.

“ The strictest temperance was regularly preserved by Catherine, in a country, and at a court, where a little deviation would not have given occasion to much scandal. A slight breakfast, a moderate dinner, and two or three glasses of wine, (for she never indulged in supper,) constituted her usual diet.

“ It is far more easy to describe the *empress* than the *woman*. The acts of the former have now become history, but those of the latter must



be left to the pen of genius, that can act the part of Ithuriel's spear, and analyze the springs of human action.

"It must be confessed that both she and the empire appear to have been frequently a prey to favouritism; and this part of her conduct, by being connected with the happiness of millions of her subjects, is highly censurable.

"As a sovereign she stands conspicuous. She increased the extent of Russia, and added not only new countries but new nations to that mighty empire. As a conqueror her victories were numerous and brilliant. She triumphed equally by sea and land; and had she lived but ten years longer, might have realised the proud dream of her ambition, and beheld her grandson Constantine, sitting on the throne of the Ottomans. Her merit as a legislator too is great; but she would have been far more worthy of our admiration, had she effected the generous idea of enfranchising all the peasantry of her immense dominions.

"She was the only sovereign of Russia who ever exhibited a taste for letters. This was not all: she was an author herself, and did not disdain to compose little treatises for her grand children, whose education she superintended. Her imperial majesty's works consist of

I. Miscellaneous Pieces; or the Library of the Grand Dukes.

II. Sketch of the Russian History.

III. Tale of the Czarevitz Chlor.

IV. Some Observations on the Climate of Russia.

“ For music she possessed an exquisite relish, and brought Gabrielli and a number of singers of great note from Italy, allowing them liberal salaries, and treating them with great attention.

“ Throughout the whole of her long reign, Catherine also evinced a marked predilection for painting. In the midst of a war with the Turks, she purchased pictures in Holland to the amount of sixty thousand rubles, all of which were lost in consequence of a ship being wrecked on the coast of Finland. This however rather served to stimulate her to fresh exertions, and her agents accordingly procured whatever was to be found in Italy worthy of notice. The Houghton collection from England, was also transferred by an act of her munificence, to the shores of the Baltic; and, while it added to her glory, disgraced this nation in the eyes of foreigners.

“ Her conduct to learned men was truly worthy of a woman of genius. She was proud of the correspondence and friendship of Voltaire. She invited Diderot to her court, and lived with him, while there, in habits of the utmost familiarity. To D'Alembert she looked up as to a Superior Being, and endeavoured, although in vain, to seduce him to reside at St. Petersburg. But he possessed a haughty soul, was devoted to liberty, and would not consent to degrade the mind of a freeman by residing among a nation of slaves.

“ To the honour of Catherine she was extremely attentive to the education of her people, and in-



stituted a prodigious number of schools for their instruction. To remove their prejudices against inoculation, she herself submitted to the operation, and thus hazarded her life for her nation. Amidst the schemes of grandeur, the allurements of power, and the gratification of the passions, she found leisure to civilize and instruct her subjects. This added not a little to her glory, as it contributed to the benefit of so large a portion of the human race.

“No woman could so easily forgive; and in this point of view her conduct must be allowed to have possessed a great share of magnanimity. No personage in our own times has attracted a greater share of censure and eulogium; and no woman in any age ever exhibited more of the masculine greatness of one sex, and the feminine weakness of another. As a female, she appears at times the slave of passion and the puppet of her courtiers; but while we behold her diminishing in this point of view into insignificance, we look again and contemplate the *sovereign*, towering like an immense colossus, and with one foot placed on Cherson, and another at Kamschatka, waving her iron sceptre over the subject nations, and regulating the destiny of a large portion of mankind.

“The frailties however of the woman will soon be forgotten, while the glory that encircles the brows of the legislator and conqueror, will long continue to dazzle the eyes of an admiring world. The present age however shudders at the untimely fate of Peter and of Ivan, and posterity will not

easily pardon the degradation of Stanislaus, the partition of Poland, and the massacre's of Ismailow and of Prague." *Annual Necrology*, vol. i. p. 288—294.

No sooner had the grand duke Paul ascended the throne, vacated by the death of the empress Catherine, than he repaired to the prison in which Kosciusko, the Polish patriot, was incarcerated, and immediately set him at liberty. This gallant general arrived on May 30, 1797, in the river Thames, on board a Swedish vessel, attended by many Polish officers, who were going with him to America. He was in a dreadful wounded state, having one wound in his head, and three occasioned by the bayonet, in his back, and part of his thigh had been carried away by a cannon ball.

Paul issued an edict, enjoining all *foreigners* in Petersburg to wear cocked hats, their hair in bags, &c. and not to drive through the city with more than two horses. This served to exhibit a trait of the emperor, more calculated to excite risibility than respect, and presaged what the Russians had to expect from their new sovereign. In addition to the above, he prohibited the military wearing any gold or silver upon their uniforms; and ordered, that every soldier who should have served twenty five years, should be exempted from military punishment, and also rewarded with a medal of the order of St. Ann.

The emperor was crowned at Moscow, on April, 16, 1797, and he conferred on Prince Repnin the rank of general field-marshal. To Prince Kurakin his majesty gave him the palace of Saint



Marcoff. When Admiral Duncan gained the great naval victory at Camperdown, Paul addressed the following letter, accompanied with the insignia of the order of St. Alexander.

*"Peterhoff, July 19, 1797.*

"ADMIRAL DUNCAN,

"IN consideration of the talents which you have displayed during your military career, the honourable and distinguished manner in which you acquitted yourself in the command which you had over my squadron, destined to combat, conjointly with yours, the enemies of your country, and the zeal which you have manifested for the well-being of my subjects, as well officers as seamen, I have created you chevalier of my imperial order of St. Alexander Nefsky, the insignia of which accompany this for your investiture. I flatter myself that the justice which I now render you, will be received by you as a striking proof of my high consideration and good wishes. I pray God to have you in his holy and particular keeping.

(Signed)

"PAUL."

The new emperor entered into an alliance with Turkey, Great Britain, and the king of the two Sicilies, against the French republic. The united Russian and Turkish forces on the town and forts of Corfu, capitulated on March 2, 1799.

The following provisional treaty between his majesty the king of Great Britain, and his majesty

the emperor of all the Russias, was signed at St. Petersburg, December 29, 1798.

In the name of the most Holy and Indivisible Trinity!

His majesty the king of Great Britain, and his Majesty the emperor of all the Russias, in consequence of the alliance and friendship subsisting between them, being desirous to enter into concert measures, such as may contribute in the most efficacious manner to oppose the successes of the French arms in the extension of the principles of anarchy, and to bring about a solid peace, together with the re-establishment of the balance of Europe; have judged it worthy their most serious consideration and earnest solicitude, to endeavour if possible to reduce France within its former limits, as they subsisted before the revolution. They have in consequence agreed to conclude a provisional treaty, and for this purpose they have named as their plenipotentiaries, namely, his majesty the king of Great Britain, Sir Charles Whitworth, K. B. his envoy extraordinary and minister plenipotentiary at the imperial court of Russia, and his majesty the emperor of all the Russias, the chancellor Prince Besborodko. It is then specified:

I. That the two contracting parties united with the design of inducing the king of Prussia to take an active part in the war against the common enemy, and upon his Prussian majesty acceding, the emperor of Russia would furnish him with 45,000 men, with the necessary artillery, upon condition that,



II. This body of troops shall be put in motion as soon as it should be ascertained that his Prussian majesty was agreeable to act as before stated, and a mutual communication should be made of the arrangements of this army to both the king of England and the emperor of Russia.

III. His Britannic majesty engages to furnish the pecuniary succours afterward stated, his imperial majesty nevertheless reserving to himself the right to recal the aforesaid body of troops into his own territories, if by any unforeseen event the whole of the pecuniary succour should not be furnished him.

IV. That his majesty the king of Great Britain, as soon as he shall be informed of the troops being ready to march, shall pay for the first and most urgent expences, £225,000, dividing the payments in such manner, as that £75,000 should be paid as soon as the troops shall have passed the Russian frontiers. That the second payment of the same sum to be at the expiration of the first three months; and on the commencement of the fourth, the third payment in like manner. The king of Great Britain also to furnish to the emperor of Russia, a subsidy of £75,000 per month for the space of twelve months.

V. The two contracting powers engage not to make peace, or an armistice, without including each other, and concerting with each other: but if through any unforeseen events his Britannic majesty should be under the necessity of terminating the war, and of discontinuing the payment, in that case to pay three months advance of the subsidy agreed upon of £75,000.

VI. If any aggression on Russia should take place, by which the emperor of Russia might be obliged to recal his army, the above-mentioned subsidy shall in such case only be paid up to the day on which the army shall re-enter the Russian frontiers.

Such were the chief articles of the treaty entered into between his Britannic majesty and the emperor Paul.

But if Great Britain rested upon the auxiliary strength of the emperor of Russia, it was soon evidenced that it rested upon a "Reed shaken with the wind." Mr. Charles Small Pybus, a lord of the treasury, and an intimate friend of Mr. Pitt, had written a poem, entitled "The Sovereign," which he dedicated to the emperor Paul. It was a poem without the smallest particle of genius, and the whole was a disgusting, fulsome eulogium on the monarch to whom it was dedicated. How far the emperor Paul merited the eulogiums conferred upon him by some persons, will be best ascertained from the observations of a very judicious writer, in a highly and justly esteemed periodical work:

"The desultory and frantic mind of the emperor Paul, had been irritated by various accidents, against the courts of both Vienna and London, but especially against the latter. Disputes had arisen, even to the height of action, between the Prussians and Austrians, after the reduction of the Ex-Venetian isles, in 1799, at Ancona. The Austrians had not duly supported the Russians in the campaign of that year against France; and it appeared, not without reason, that a rival and neighbouring empire



was not actuated by the principles which had drawn the Russian potentate into the confederation against the French republic, but by views of individual aggrandisement. Whatever was the cause, certain it is that the emperor of Russia had conceived great disgust at the emperor of Germany, insomuch, that when the latter announced his intention of sending an extraordinary ambassador to Petersburg to offer excuses for what had happened at Ancona, Paul refused to receive him; and the more fully to give vent to his passion, he gave orders that no answer should be given to the notification from Francis. As to England, mutual accusations had taken place between the Russian and the English generals, after the unsuccessful and disastrous expedition to Holland in 1799. After the first ebullitions of the emperor's rage against his own officers, his jealousy and resentment was awakened against the English. The beginning resentment of Paul against the British nation, as well as the court of St. James's, was influenced by the failure of his schemes in the Mediterranean.

“The genius of the Russian government, amidst the caprices and singularities of individual characters, preserves on the whole the impulse and determination that was given to it by the great Peter. It was his aim to have a firm footing in the Mediterranean, as well as on the Northern Ocean and the Baltic. In pursuance of this general aim, Paul had been led by a concurrence of circumstances, which need not here to be enumerated, to fix his eyes and heart on Malta. Though no absolute promise was made to that prince by the other allies, yet it would

appear that some hopes had been held out to him, or at least, that he was allowed, without being undeceived, to entertain a sanguine expectation of being presented with it. A fleet with troops had sailed from the Black Sea in August, 1800, for the express purpose of taking possession of the place when it should surrender. No remonstrances were made, when Paul assumed ridiculously the title of Grand Master of Malta; and when he pretended to make Captain Home Popham a knight of that order, his right so to do was recognised in the London Gazette. When the original destination of that fleet was frustrated by the surrender of Malta, and its occupation by the English, it remained long at anchor in the canal of Constantinople, waiting for orders how to act. The resentment of the emperor was in the first instance, as usual in such cases, wreaked on a weak party presenting itself as a ready object for the gratification of his passion. He demanded from the grand seignior, the ally of England, a large sum, stipulated, he alledged, to be paid by the Turks for the maritime aid of the Russians. A sharp dispute arose on this subject. The Russian admiral refused to return to the Crimea till the money should be paid, and even threatened hostile measures against Constantinople. The Porte was obliged to yield to the menaces of the enraged czar of Muscovy. Nor is it by any means unimportant, however ludicrous, on the present head to mention, that Paul was highly offended by the caricatures of his person and character, published in the streets of London, and which Buonaparte took special care to have trans-



mitted to Peterburg. On the irritable and irritated temper of the emperor, disgusted with Austria, and much more with England, but as prone to sentiments of gratitude and generosity as to those of resentment, Buonaparte operated with consummate address and complete success.

“The world was not a little surprized at the arrival of an embassy in Paris from Paul I. not more than a year after his famous proclamation for restoring the throne of the Bourbons. This embassy consisted of the General Baron de Sprengporten, an old Swedish refugee at the court of Russia, Prince Joseph Dolgorowki, the Count de Tissenhaveen, a captain in the Russian army, Mr. de Scheping, son of the grand marshal of Courland, and other gentlemen. This stately company was met by General Clarke at Brussels, and by him conducted to Paris on the 18th of December. The ostensible object of the embassy was to treat for the release of the Russian prisoners that had fallen into the hands of the French, to the number of 7000. For this body of Russians, the British government had refused to exchange an equal number of French prisoners. The chief consul, in compliment to Paul, gave orders that all the Russian prisoners should be newly clothed and accoutred in the uniforms of their respective regiments, and restored freely without exchange or ransom. Each man was presented with a fusil of French manufacture.

“The Baron de Spengporten bore the title only of envoy. He was followed in February, 1801, by an ambassador, accompanied by a retinue equally splendid. The envoy with his train was treated with

very marked respect, but still greater marks of respect and reverence were in reserve for the ambassador. When it was made known in France that an ambassador from Russia was on his way to Paris, his arrival in that city was expected with the utmost eagerness, and every preparation possible was made to gratify the vanity of Paul in the person of his ambassador. This was the Count Kalitcheff, a man of modest, unassuming, and courtly manners, who had before sustained the character of Russian ambassador at Berlin and other courts. The count must doubtless have been astonished to find himself treated by so great and glorious a nation as the French, with a degree of magnificence and of adulation, exceeding all the marks of honour and devotion that he had ever known to be paid to his own imperial master. On his entrance into Paris, he was saluted by a fire of all the cannon. A magnificent palace was appropriated to his residence, and he was entertained at the expence of the republic. He was honoured with a body guard. It was artfully contrived, that petitions should be presented to him from persons under the prosecution or the sentence of the law, imploring his interference in their behalf with the chief consul. The protection of Kalitcheff was never extended to any one without effect. His applications to the consuls were never made in vain. But what was considered as the head and crown of all this climax of compliment to Paul, was the affectation of granting, only through the intercession of the emperor of Russia, peace and independence to the king of Naples. The queen of Naples, judging rightly of the character of Paul,



governed more by private humours and caprices than by views of sound policy, or even of ambition, had gone to Petersburg in November, 1800, to persuade the emperor to continue the war, or if not, to continue at least, his countenance to the royal family of Naples, and to exert his influence and authority for the safety of the kingdom. A lady in distress could not solicit in vain the protection of a knight errant, after so long a journey in suit of it. The emperor's zeal in the cause of the Neapolitans was increased.

“The French government expressed a disposition to grant to the intercession of Paul, what they would have granted without it. General Murat, on the 24th of January, 1801, wrote from Florence to General de Damas, commander of the Neapolitan troops, as follows:—

“It is almost a month, general, since the French ministry acquainted you that the interest which his majesty the emperor of Russia takes in the king of Naples, had induced the first consul to bury in oblivion the innumerable injuries of all kinds of which your government has been guilty towards the French people. After this opening towards a good understanding, we entertained the hope that you would have remained a quiet spectator of a contest, in which you can be but of little consequence on one side or other. Yet the king of Naples, forgetting for the tenth time the dictates of sound policy, and what was due to the generous conduct of the French government, dispatched his troops into Tuscany, where they came to be thrashed by General Miollis. But war is attended

with so many calamities, that the French government studies all possible means of avoiding it. I. Evacuate all the ecclesiastical states, and the castle of St. Angelo. II. Make no further claims of any benefits from the armistice of Treviso, in which you are not included, nor at all mentioned, or on the influence of a power which must no longer protect you. The only prince who has it now in his power to protect you, in consequence of the personal regard that is borne to him by the first consul, is the emperor of all the Russias. Let it be the study, Sir, of your government, to merit a continuation of that prince's goodness, which cannot be done but by shutting all the ports of Sicily and Naples against the navigation of the English, and laying an embargo on all the ships of that nation, which it is now high time to expel from all points of the continent." (*Annual Register*, 1801, p. 77—80.)

The emperor Paul, who had once evidenced such attachment to the interests of Great Britain, became her most rancorous and malignant enemy. In consequence of the detention of the Danish fleet by England, Paul laid an embargo on all English ships in his harbour; but upon the adjustment of the dispute with Denmark, he thought it expedient to take it off. But he rigorously prosecuted his plan of uniting the other Northern powers in a confederacy against England. "He recruited his armies as well as his navy. The movements of his troops towards the confines of Turkey in Europe, appeared to indicate some plan concerted between him and the chief consul, who had become his great idol, for the purpose of intimidating the grand seignior (17, 18.) 2 Y



into some concessions as favourable to France, as detrimental to England." The reason assigned by Paul for setting on foot a great army on the side of the Baltic, and distributing it in certain stations, was, "That several political circumstances induced his majesty, the emperor, to think that a rupture might ensue of the friendship between Russia and England." The most active preparations for naval war were carried on in all the Russian ports. At the close of October, 1800, the emperor published a declaration, announcing his determination to revive the armed neutrality; and in an official note, dated November 7, 1800, it was stated, "That his imperial majesty had learned that the island of Malta, lately in the possession of the French, had been surrendered to the English troops; but as yet it was uncertain whether the agreement entered into on the 30th of December, 1798, would be fulfilled, according to which, that island was to be restored to the order of St. John of Jerusalem, of which his majesty, the emperor of all the Russias, was grand master. His imperial majesty being determined to defend his rights, had been pleased to command, that an embargo should be laid on all English ships in the ports of his empire till the above-mentioned convention should be fulfilled." By virtue of this order, an embargo was laid on near 300 British ships in the ports of Petersburg, Riga, Revel, and Cronstadt; but the crews, with their commanders, were taken out of the vessels, and dispersed into the interior parts of the country, to distances from a hundred to a thousand miles, in bodies often of twelve men, into prison.

“ On shore all British property was sequestered, seals were placed on all warehouses containing English goods, and the owners were obliged to enter into recognizances to take inventories of their effects, and report the same to the government. When the embargo on the English ships took place at Narva, on the 5th of November, the crews of two of the vessels, indignant at such arbitrary proceedings, on the arrival of a military force to put them under arrest, making resistance with pistols and cutlasses, weighed anchor and made off. The emperor, enraged at this, ordered the remainder of the ships in that port to be burnt. Paul was also enabled to gain over the young king of Sweden to his cause. That monarch had an interview with the emperor at Petersburg. He travelled under the name of Count Haga. Paul, delighted at the compliment paid him by the visit of Gustavus, invested him with the cross of the order of St. John of Jerusalem, or in other words, created him a knight of Malta.

The British government, in consequence of the violent conduct of the emperor Paul, on the 14th of January, 1801, ordered a seizure, not only in the way of retaliation on Russian ships, but on all vessels belonging to any of the confederate powers at that time in any of the ports of Great Britain, those of Prussia alone excepted. A vast number of vessels in English ports were stopped, and many others taken at sea. Denmark, which had been the first to join in the Northern confederacy planned by Russia, had received a severe chastisement from the triumphant navy of Great Britain. The British



fleet, under the command of Admiral Sir Hyde Parker, having under him the hero of the Nile, in an engagement which took place, the Danes were defeated with very great loss. It was soon after this event, and while negotiations were carrying on between Denmark and England, that the emperor Paul was found dead in his bed on the night of March 22, 1801.

"This sudden and important event was joyful to all, the French government excepted, and surprising to few! For more than a year past Paul had exhibited multiplied symptoms of insanity. In this, the prominent ingredient was generally anger and rage. When dispatches were presented to him from the British government, containing terms of conciliation, he returned them unopened, after piercing them in many places with a penknife. In a review of some troops in front of his palace, an officer was thrown from his horse and dislocated his arm. The brutal emperor, instead of showing any signs of compassion, kicked the officer as he lay on the ground with his feet. Yet his madness, though still somewhat tinctured with violence, was sometimes mixed with a degree of whimsical humour. In private conversation with a nobleman of his court, without any provocation or preliminary, he gave him a hearty slap in the face, adding these words from St. Paul: "The salutation of me Paul with mine own hand." (1 *Corinthians*, xvi. 21.) A few days before the young king of Sweden left Petersburg the emperor gave a tournament, a diversion of which he was very fond, and in which he performed personally as a combatant. In the evening, while

the glass was in circulation with Russian briskness, a dispatch was received from Buonaparte, together with several caricatures said to be published in England, in which Paul was represented as a lunatic, the conversation turned on the military successes of the French, the projects formed by the Northern confederacy to humble the pride of England, and the invincible prowess which the emperor had displayed all day long in the tournament. His majesty, fired with the spirit of chivalry, immediately resolved to send a defiance to all the potentates of Europe. The court gazette of St. Petersburg, December 30, 1800, contained the following:

“It is said that his majesty the emperor, seeing that the powers of Europe cannot agree, and wishing to terminate a war which has raged eleven years, intends to propose a place where he will invite all other potentates to fight with them in barriers closed up, for which purpose they are to bring with them their most enlightened ministers and most skilful generals as squires, umpires, and heralds, such as Thugut, Pitt, and Bernstoff. He himself intends to have with him Count Vander Pahlen and Count Kutusoff.”

From the time when this most ridiculous article appeared, there was but one opinion throughout Petersburg, namely, that a revolution was at hand. The court gave out that the emperor was cut off by a stroke of apoplexy. The world believed that his death was the effect of a conspiracy. We shall now present our readers with various anecdotes of the emperor Paul as related by a writer of



strict veracity. (*Secret Memoirs of the Court of Russia.*)

“What soon shewed that Paul on becoming emperor, by no means renounced the military frivolities which had entirely occupied him while grand duke, was his devoting all his attention, from the morning of his ascending to the throne, to the trifling changes he was about to introduce into the dress and exercise of the soldiers. For a moment the palace had the appearance of a place taken by assault by foreign troops; those who began to mount guard there differing so much in dress and style from those who had been seen there the day before. He went down into the court, where he was manœuvring his soldiers three or four hours to teach them to mount guard after his fashion, and establish his guard parade, which became the most important institution, and the central point of his administration. Every day he dedicated the same time to it, however cold the weather. Here, in a plain deep green uniform, great boots, and a large hat, he spent the morning in exercising his guards, giving orders, receiving reports, distributing favours, rewards, and punishments. Surrounded by his sons and aid-de-camps, stamping his heels on the pavement to keep himself warm, his bald head bare, his snub nose cocked up to the wind, one hand behind his back, and with the other raising and falling his cane in due time, and crying *raz, dva*, one, two, he would brave the most piercing cold.

Paul, soon after his accession, issued a proclamation prohibiting the wearing of round hats.

In consequence of this edict, the Cossacks and soldiers of the police ran up to the passengers in the streets, and snatched off their hats, beating those who not knowing the reason, attempted to defend themselves. An English merchant going through the street in a sledge was thus stopped, and his hat snatched off. Supposing it a robbery, he leaped out of his sledge, knocked down the soldier, and called the guard. Instead of the guard, arrived an officer, who overpowered and bound him; but as they were carrying him before the police, he was fortunate enough to meet the coach of the English minister, who was going to court, and claimed his protection. Sir Charles Whitworth made his complaint to the emperor, who conjecturing that a round hat might be the national dress of the English, as it is of the Swedes, said that his order had been misconceived. The next day it was published in the streets and houses, that strangers who were not in the emperor's service or naturalized, were not comprised in the prohibition.

“ It was antiently a point of etiquette for every person who met a Russian autocrat, his wife, or son, to stop his horse or coach, alight, and prostrate himself in the snow, or in the mud. This barbarous homage, difficult to be paid in a large city, where carriages pass in great numbers, and always on the gallop, had been completely abolished under the polished reign of Catherine. One of the first cares of Paul was to re-establish it in all its rigour. A general officer, whose coachman passed on without observing the emperor riding by on horseback,



was stopped, and immediately put under arrest. The same disagreeable circumstance occurred to several others, so that nothing was so much dreaded either on foot or in a carriage, as to meet Paul. What befel a lady of the name of Likarof, however, deserves to be recorded, for the sake of inspiring that horror which is due to tyrants.

“ This lady being in the country, at a small distance from Petersburg, with her husband, Brigadier Likarof, he happened to be taken ill, and from the tenderness of her affection not caring to trust to others, she set out herself to fetch a physician, and the necessary assistance from town. Her country servants, not knowing the emperor, and still less his new regulations, and she, absorbed in the apprehensions of her husband's danger, ordered them to drive to the physician's house as fast as possible. Unfortunately her carriage passed without stopping, at some distance from Paul, who was taking the air on horseback. Enraged at this, he immediately dispatched an aid-de-camp to stop the coach, commanded the four servants to be sent off as soldiers, and the lady to be conveyed for her impertinence, to the prison of the police. These orders were executed on the spot, and the unfortunate lady of the brigadier was kept in confinement four days. This shocking treatment, with the condition in which she had left her husband, wrought so forcibly on her feelings, as to throw her into a violent fever, which brought on a delirium. She was at length removed to an inn that some care might be taken of her, but her reason she never recovered. Her husband, deprived of his

wife and servants, and left without assistance, died in a state of the deepest affliction without ever seeing her more.

"The etiquette established within the palace, became equally strict and equally dreaded. Woe to him who when permitted to kiss the rough hand of Paul, failed to make the floor resound by striking it with his knee as loud as a soldier with the butt end of his firelock: It was requisite too that the smack of the lips on his hand should be heard, to certify the reality of the kiss, as well as of the genuflexion. Prince George Gallitzin, the chamberlain, was put under arrest on the spot, by his majesty himself, for having made the bow and kissed the hand too negligently."

Marshal Suwarrow, when he received the ridiculous orders relative to the dress of the soldiers; the old veteran, when he viewed the little sticks as measures, and the models of the soldier's tails and side curls, exclaimed, "hair powder is not gunpowder; curls are not cannons; and tails are not bayonets." For this sarcasm Suwarrow was dismissed the service. Of the credulity of this strange and capricious sovereign, the following anecdote fully evinces.

"A soldier in the guards having stood sentry at a door of a summer palace, went to his captain, pretending he had a secret to communicate. He informed him, that while he was on duty, he saw a light in the uninhabited apartments of the palace, and presently some person knocked at the door at which he stood, and called him by name. He had



the courage to look through the chinks in the door, and there beheld Saint Michael. The Saint ordered him to go to the emperor, and tell him that he must build him a church on that spot. In consequence the soldier begged him to speak to the emperor, or he must take the liberty to do it himself in obedience to his mission. The officer treated the visionary as a madman, and sent him about his business; he however mentioned the adventure to the major, who thought proper to relate it to Paul. The soldier was called, and ordered to repeat the account of his vision. The emperor told him, that St. Michael should be obeyed, for he had already been inspired with the design of building him a church, and had even the plan prepared. On this he sent for a model of a church, which he had ready in his closet. This farce took place at the court of Russia in the month of December, 1796. The miracle is unravelled when it is known, that a cousin of the soldier was one of Paul's valet-de-chambres, and that the soldier, by way of recompence, was promoted to the same post.

The emperor Alexander had been educated in a manner which was best calculated to form his mind for the attainment of true glory. La Harpe, a celebrated French writer, was his tutor. He had exhibited, when grand duke, a splendid display of talents and of virtues which heir apparents to a crown seldom display.

The eyes of all Europe were fixed upon the young autocrate of all the Russias, the emperor Alexander. The first acts of his government au-

gured well. He, upon his accession to the imperial crown, ordered all the persons appertaining to Great Britain, who had been so illegally imprisoned, to be released.

When the duke d'Enghien was arrested by order of Buonaparte, then constituted emperor of the French, the emperor Alexander transmitted the following declaration to the diet then assembled at Ratisbon, by his minister, M. Ruppell.

“ The event which has taken place, in the states of his highness the elector of Baden, the conclusion of which has been so melancholy, has occasioned the most poignant grief to the emperor of all the Russias. He cannot but view with the greatest concern, the violation which has been committed on the tranquillity and integrity of the German territories. His imperial majesty is the more affected by this event, as he never could have expected that a power which had undertaken, in common with himself, the office of mediator, and was consequently bound to exert its care for the welfare and tranquillity of Germany, could have departed in such a manner from the sacred principles of the law of nations, and the duties it had so lately taken upon itself.

“ It would be unnecessary to call the attention of the diet to the serious consequences to which the German empire must be exposed, if acts of violence, of which the first example has just been seen, should be passed over in silence. It will with its accustomed foresight, easily perceive how much the future tranquillity and security of the



whole empire, and each of its members, must be endangered, if such violent proceedings should be deemed allowable, and suffered to take place without observation or opposition. Moved by these considerations, and in quality of guarantee of the Germanic empire, and that of mediator, the emperor considers it as his duty solemnly to protest against an action, which is such an attack on the tranquillity and security of Germany. Justly alarmed at the mournful prospect it presents, his majesty made no delay to represent his manner of thinking on the subject to the first consul, by the Russian charge d'affaires at Paris.

“ While his majesty adopts a measure prescribed to him by his solicitude for the welfare of the German empire, he is convinced that the diet and the head of the empire will do justice to his disinterested and manifestly indispensable care; and that they will unite their endeavours with his to transmit their just remonstrances to the French government, to prevail on it to take such steps and measures as the violation of their dignity may require, and the maintenance of their future security may render necessary.”

On May 7, 1804, his imperial majesty issued an ukase, relative to the admission of foreigners into the Russian dominions. It consisted of ten articles, the design of which were to preclude persons of a suspicious and dangerous description from establishing their residence in Russia.

The seven Ionian islands, where the emperor Alexander had a large body of troops, felt such

sentiments of respect and veneration for the emperor, that the republic, by the voice of the legislative assembly, voted a monument to be erected in honour of the emperor of Russia. As soon as Alexander was acquainted with this circumstance, he sent a letter, thanking the republic for the honor they proposed to confer upon him, at the same time requesting that the funds, destined for that object, should be laid out on some work of public utility. In a proclamation published by the prince and president of the seven islands, referring to this act of the Russian emperor, the following eulogium appears.

“That Hero, Alexander, (citizens of the seven islands) sensible of the wish expressed by our representatives, of placing the statue of his sacred person in the hall of the legislature, will not consent that a part of the feeble resources of the republic should be employed for this purpose; he wishes that it should be consecrated to some establishment, which may be productive of immediate advantage to the people. Citizens, behold in these elevated thoughts of Alexander, the happy destiny which is your lot, and will be that of your posterity!” The Ionian islands were at this time under the special protection and guardianship of Russia.

Upon the resignation of Mr. Addington, who was called up to the house of peers by the title of Lord Viscount Sidmouth, Mr. Pitt, for the second time, was placed at the helm of affairs. “While in opposition, he had loudly condemned the inactivity of ministers, and he felt the necessity therefore, of signalizing his administration by some extraordinary



effort. His attention was of course immediately directed to the continent; and he laboured to form a new league among the states of Europe, against the power of France. The situation of the continent was favourable to the accomplishment of his design. Russia and Sweden were disgusted and irritated by the conduct of France; and Austria observed the measures of that government with jealousy and alarm. The negotiation was carried on with great activity through the medium of the court of St. Petersburg. Russia entered into the measure with eagerness and zeal; but Austria, who was sensible that she had much more at stake than the other powers, was wavering and timid. It was hoped, and expected however, that the influence of the pecuniary means of Great Britain, the entreaties and remonstrances of Russia, and the continually increasing irritation arising from the measures of the French government, would at no distant period, induce her to unite in the league.

“The empire of Russia had, for many years, been constantly and rapidly increasing in influence and power. Her establishments upon the borders of the Euxine, were prosperous and flourishing, and the population in that quarter of her dominions advanced with surprising rapidity. By the possession of the Ionian islands, she had completed the subjection of Turkey, and was ready to oppose any hostile designs which the French government might meditate against that country. Her armies, under the command of Suwarrow, had signalized themselves by repeated victories over the best troops, and generals of France; while the subsequent dis-

asters in Switzerland, were justly ascribed to the selfish spirit and jealousy of Austria. The impression, created by the events of the Italian campaign, had indeed, in some degree, been impaired by the conduct of the Russians in Holland : but much was still expected from their numbers, steadiness, and discipline. The war, in which the empire was engaged with Persia, occupied but a small part of its force. The Russians had been recently victorious in several successive engagements ; they had advanced almost to the gates of Tauris, and the Persian monarch, it was said, had determined to place himself at the head of his army, in order to arrest their progress. The population of Russia, notwithstanding its immense extent, was estimated at little more than thirty millions. Her regular army consisted of about 500,000 men. The revenues of the emperor were not very considerable, but his finances were free from any great embarrassments. The navy of Russia had been created by the active genius of Peter, but the establishment was still in its infancy. No material change had taken place for several years, either in its force or character. Russia possessed an inexhaustible supply of the materials requisite for ship-building, but she had few vessels employed in trade ; and experience sufficiently proves, that no exertion can long support a powerful navy without an extensive commercial marine.

“ The diplomatic intercourse between Russia and France, had been for a considerable time suspended. The circumstances which led to the coolness between the two governments arose from various



causes. The refusal of Buonaparte to execute the secret articles of the convention, with Russia, and his extraordinary language and conduct to Count Markow. But the resentment and hostility of the emperor Alexander, were increased by the subsequent measures of the French government, by its conduct with regard to the independent states of Germany, by the atrocious murder of the Duke D'Enghien, and by that spirit of unceasing encroachment and aggression, by which she was actuated. It became necessary to make every exertion to reduce a power, which a concurrence of extraordinary circumstances had rendered so formidable, and which from the system with which it was administered, was productive of such monstrous abuses. Influenced by these dispositions, he entered into active negotiations with Great Britain, and every effort was made to induce the court of Vienna to co-operate with these powers, for the attainment of the same object. It would be unjust to the character of the emperor Alexander, to assert that he was not sincerely anxious to provide some adequate security for the independence and tranquillity of Europe; it would be unjust to suppose that he would not have been willing to make great sacrifices, in the pursuit of so important and honourable a service; but as the motives of human action are seldom wholly unmixed; as the emperor had been insulted in the person of his ambassador; as these insults had been wantonly repeated, through the medium of the official paper of the French government; we may presume, that his activity was quickened, and his zeal stimulated, upon this occasion,

by feelings of offended pride, and personal irritation and resentment." (*Annual Register*, 1805. p. 288.)

On April 11, 1805, a treaty was concluded between Great Britain and Russia, by the articles of which, each power agreed to adopt the most efficacious means for forming a general league of the states of Europe, to be directed against the power of France. Hanover had been seized upon by the French: one object of the treaty was to cause it to be evacuated. The other subjects which this treaty embraced, were, The establishment of the independence of the republics of Holland and Switzerland. The re-establishment of the king of Sardinia in Piedmont, with as large an augmentation of territory as circumstances would admit. The future security of the kingdom of Naples, and the compleat evacuation of Italy, the island of Elba included, by the French forces; and, finally, The establishment of an order of things in Europe, which might effectually guarantee the security and independence of the different states, and present a solid barrier against future usurpation. It was also proposed, that an army of five hundred thousand men should be levied, but in a subsequent article it was agreed, that the number should be limited to 400,000. Subsidies were to be granted by Great Britain, in the proportion of £1,250,000 for every 100,000 men. To induce the emperor of Germany to join this league, a separate article was added to the treaty; by which it was provided, That Great Britain should pay to Austria the stipulated subsidy, in the event only of her forces being brought to act against France, within the period of four months. M. Novosilt-  
(19, 20)



zoff, the great chamberlain of the emperor, was sent to Berlin, to apply, through the medium of the government of Prussia, for passports to the French ambassador, resident at that court. Buonaparte at this time was at Milan, and orders were immediately issued for the passports to be issued. Upon the annexation of Genoa to France, the emperor Alexander was particularly incensed at the insidious conduct of the emperor of France. He issued immediate orders for the recal of M. Nevosiltzoff. A memorial was also sent to the court of Berlin couched in the following words :

“That the emperor had, in compliance with the wishes of his Britannic majesty, sent his ambassador to Buonaparte, to meet the pacific overtures which he had made to the court of London : that the existing disagreement between Russia and France, might have placed insurmountable obstacles in the way of a negociation for peace, by a Russian minister, but that his imperial majesty of Russia, did not, for a moment, hesitate to pass over all personal displeasure, and all the usual formalities ; that he had declared he would receive the passports upon condition, that his minister should enter directly upon a negociation, with the chief of the French government, without acknowledging the new title which he had assumed, and that Buonaparte should give explicit assurances that he was still animated by the same wish for a general peace, which he had appeared to shew in his letter to his Britannic majesty ; that after his Prussian majesty had transmitted the positive answer of the court of the Thuilleries, that it persevered in the intention,

sincerely to lend its hand to a pacific negotiation, the emperor had accepted the passports, but that by a fresh transgression of the most solemn treaties the union of the Ligurian governments with France, had been effected; that this event of itself, the circumstances which had accompanied it, the formalities which had been employed to hasten the execution of it, the moment which had been chosen to carry the same into execution, had formed an aggregate which must terminate the sacrifices which the emperor would have made at the pressing request of Great Britain, and in the hope of restoring tranquillity to Europe, by the means of negotiation."

The cabinet of Vienna was persuaded of the immediate necessity of making exertions adequate to the perils of the crisis. The Austrian armies were augmented, and large reinforcements were sent to Italy and the Tyrol: every thing announced the speedy renewal of hostilities: a regular plan of military operations was acted upon with the greatest vigour. Fortifications were constructed upon the territory of Venice, and the details of the march, and co-operation of the Russian troops, were concerted with the Baron de Wintzingerode deputed for that purpose, by the court of Petersburg. Talleyrand remonstrated with the Austrian minister, and was informed that the emperor had taken those precautionary measures, in consequence of the augmentation of the French force in Italy. Buonaparte, at length ordered his minister at Paris to deliver, in his name, a paper in which the emperors of Germany and Russia were invited to renew the amity which had been abruptly termi-



nated. When hostilities had commenced between France and Austria, Alexander dispatched general Kutusow with the first division of the Russian army, which having arrived upon the banks of the Inn, joined the Austrian army, the effective force of which combined, amounted to nearly 70,000 men. The second division of the Russians, under General Buxhovden had arrived at St. Polten, and from thence it marched to Krems, and having passed the Danube, immediately destroyed the bridge.

"This operation was scarcely accomplished before Marshal Mortier, appeared, and falling with great spirit upon the Russian outposts, in the neighbourhood of Diernstein, drove them in upon the main army. It was now evening, and the situation of the allies, who were closely pressed upon the side of Stein, became extremely critical. It was necessary to force the enemy from his position. Accordingly, at day break on the following morning, the Russian army having formed itself into three columns, advanced against the French lines with the utmost impetuosity and fury. The enemy, after a sharp conflict, was every where routed; great numbers were slain; many escaped into the vessels, which had been collected in the river, and about 2000 men, with a great proportion of officers, were taken prisoners. This victory, so important in the present situation of the army, was obtained without any considerable loss of men on the part of the Russians.

The taking Vienna, and the alarming progress of the French arms in Germany, made the allies very strenuous in endeavouring to preserve the king

of Prussia from being seduced from the alliance. The emperor Alexander, zealously active in that cause, which he viewed so essential to the peace and welfare of Europe, resolved to have a personal interview with Frederic William. He arrived at Berlin, October 26, 1805. The two sovereigns visited the tomb of Frederic the great, and before the mausoleum, which contained the mortal remains of that celebrated warrior, entered into a solemn engagement not to make peace with France, but the vacillating policy of the court of Berlin, soon made it subservient to the views of Napoleon.

Murat had been dispatched with the cavalry in pursuit of the Russian army, which had crossed the Danube, in conjunction with the Austrians, and he overtook the allied army at Hollabrun. Francis after the loss of his capital, had proposed to enter into a negociation for peace as soon as he had concerted measures with the emperor of Russia. Some misconception arising, the commander of the Austrian division attached to prince Kutusow, dispatched a flag of truce to Murat, soliciting leave to withdraw from the Russians; it was natural to suppose that such a request would be immediately granted; the consequence was, the Austrians withdrew. Kutusow found himself now in so dangerous a situation, that he proffered terms of capitulation to Murat; and a convention, subject to the ratification of Buonaparte, was concluded, but Napoleon refused to sanction the convention.

Alexander having arrived at Olmutz, was there joined by the Emperor of Germany; and at a council of war, it was there agreed to hazard the



chance of an engagement with the enemy. The head quarters of the two emperors, were removed to Austerlitz. It has been asserted, that as soon as Buonaparte had received intelligence of this circumstance, he exclaimed, "Before to-morrow evening this army will be mine."

On December 2, 1805, The fatal battle of Austerlitz, denominated by the French soldiers, "The battle of the three emperors" took place. Marshal Soult drove the Russians from the village and heights of Pratzen. The emperor Alexander, and his brother, the grand duke Constantine, behaved with an unprecedented degree of courage, but nothing could withstand the overwhelming power of the French troops. After a long and obstinate contest, the allies gradually retired, leaving the enemy in the undisputed possession of the field.

"The loss in this engagement fell principally upon the Russians, and was said by the enemy to have amounted to twenty-two thousand in killed and wounded, and twenty thousand prisoners. In opposition, however, to this statement, it was asserted in the official accounts, afterward published at St. Petersburg, that the entire loss in the campaign did not exceed, on the part of the Russians 17,000 men. The two commanders, Kutusow and Buxherden, with several other generals, and a great number of officers of all ranks, were wounded; several were among the slain, and many were taken prisoners. One hundred and forty-five pieces of cannon also fell into the hands of the enemy."

The consequences of the battle of Austerlitz were fatal to the interests of the allies. Prussia became

the vassal to France, and Russia was obliged to sue for peace. The Porte had taken advantage of the existing circumstances of Alexander, to commence a war with Russia ; but in this campaign, the Russian arms were victorious ; the grand vizier had crossed the Danube, when on December 18, 1811, general Kutusoff caused the Turkish army to surrender as prisoners of war, after it had lost 10,000 men in different attacks. An armistice was entered into, but early in 1812, hostilities were about to be renewed, when preliminaries of peace were entered into, and a treaty was finally ratified, August 14, 1812. After the return of Napoleon from his tour in the low countries, near the close of 1811, it was apparent that he was projecting a mighty plan for the subjugation of the Russian empire, and the annexation of it to his dominions. The first step which tended to the advancement of his plan, was the occupation of Swedish Pomerania. In January, 1812, a body of 20,000 French troops under general Friant, entered that province: Stralsund the capital, was seized upon. Troops of all the nations under French command, were marching in all directions towards the borders of the Russian empire. The emperor Alexander having left Petersburg, arrived in April 21, 1812, at Wilna. On April 25, the duke of Bassano, the French minister for foreign affairs, addressed a note to count Romanzow, chancellor of Russia. In this paper, Buonaparte complained bitterly of the emperor of Russia having infringed the treaty of Tilsit. Napoleon having determined to head his army to march against Russia, arrived at his head quarters at Konigsberg.



"On June 19, The French emperor had advanced to Gumbinnun in his march to the Niemen. Three bridges being constructed over that river, part of the army crossed without opposition, on the evening of the 23rd, and on the 24th, Napoleon was at Kowno, on the other side. The rest of the army passed on the following days, and pushed forward in divisions; the Russian light troops retreating before them on all sides. Wilna, the capital of Lithuania, at which the emperor Alexander had for some time resided, was given up without a contest; the Russians, on the approach of the French, burning the bridge over the Vilia, and after setting on fire their large magazines in that city, hastily retreated.

On the 28th, Napoleon entered Wilna, and the bridge was re-established. The Russians were pursued by the French advanced guard, and some skirmishing took place, but with no material loss on either side. Marshal Oudinot, duke of Reggio, had previously crossed the Vilia, near Kowno, on the 25th, and advancing up the country, had obliged the prince of Wiltgenstein, commandant of the first Russian corps, to evacuate all Samogitia, and the country between Kowno and the sea, and retire upon Wilkomirz. On Oudinot's advance, the Russians still retreated, and set fire to their magazines at Wilkomirz."

The divisions of the French army advanced to the Duna, on July 7, and concentrated their forces on its banks. The army however, experienced great loss from a change of weather, by which several thousand horses perished. Alexander issued a proclamation, stating, That the French had passed

the Russian border; and that Napoleon having paid no attention to the most moderate proposals, which had been offered him, was resolved upon the ruin of the country, leaving him no other alternative than to repel force by force. His imperial majesty, at this time, entered into treaties of amity and friendship with the kings of Great Britain and Sweden.

"On the 9th of July, the French advanced posts were on the Duna. Prince Bagrathion, the Russian commander, had been intercepted in his march towards Wilna, and had been obliged to move towards the Dnieper, whilst the French possessed themselves of Novogrodek, and Minsk. The great duchy of Lithuania was now considered by them as nearly conquered; and Napoleon published an act, organizing a provisional government in it, with a national guard and a gend'armerie. The Russian army moved eastward towards Witepsk, where the emperor Alexander was, on the 19th. The king of Naples (Murat) crossed the Duna without opposition on the 20th, and spread his cavalry along the right bank of that river. Various partial actions had occurred during these movements, a Russian corps at Miltan had been obliged to fight its way to Riga, that city was now thought in such immediate danger of a siege, that its suburbs were burnt down, with a vast destruction of naval and building timber.

"The Russian army, when it quitted the entrenched camp at Drissa, consisted of five corps d'armée, one of which, under general Witgenstein, remained to cover Petersburg, while the other four marched by Polotzk to Witepsk. On July 25th, two French divisions under general Nansouty, en-

(19, 20.)



countered the Russians in front of Ostrovno. On that and the two following days there was much sharp fighting in this quarter, the strength of the Russians being stated in the French bulletin, at 60,000 infantry and 1500 cavalry. The loss on both sides was considerable, but the fruits of victory remained with the French, who took many prisoners and several pieces of cannon. On the evening of the 28th, the Russian army was in full retreat towards Smolensko, and on that day the French entered Witepsk. During these transactions, prince Bagrathion, on his march, was attacked by the prince of Eckmul (Davoust) near Mohilow, and an engagement ensued which continued the greatest part of the day. It concluded with the retreat of Bagrathion, unmolested, in the direction of Smolensko, where he joined the grand army. The vicinity of Polotzk was also near this time the scene of severe contest. Marshal Oudinot having crossed the Duna with the view, it is supposed, of coming round upon Riga, was attacked by count Witgenstein on the 30th and 31st, who, according to the Russian accounts, gained a complete victory. A French bulletin, however, represents the result of another action, on August 1st, to have reversed this fortune, and left the Russians in the state of entire defeat. The capture by storm of the fortress of Dunaberg, on July 30th, was a proof that, on the whole, success still continued to attend on the French arms.

The French troops now went for a short time into what were called quarters of refreshment, in order to recruit from their losses and fatigues. They were again in motion about the 12th of August, and

the main body, under the king of Naples and the prince of Eckmül, marched upon the Dnieper in order to obtain possession of Smolensko, at which city the principal force of the Russians was assembled. On August 16th the heights of Smolensko were commanded by the French troops; the place was reconnoitered by Napoleon in person, and the army was arranged in its position. The particular operations which ensued are not intelligible without a plan; but it appears that the attack and defence were both conducted with vigour and resolution. On the night of the 17th, a dreadful conflagration broke out in the town; and after midnight it was abandoned by the Russians, who retired across the river. It was occupied on the 18th by the invaders, who at length succeeded in extinguishing the fire. The contest for this important place is said to have engaged 100,000 men on each side; and the loss of lives could not fail to be considerable, but that of the Russians is, by the French accounts, stated at triple their own. On the 19th the French crossing the Dniester, made an attack on the Russian rear-guard, the last column of which retreated to the second, which was posted on the heights of Valentina. An action was brought on to force this position, in which a large number of troops on each side was engaged, and the point was obstinately contested; it terminated in an unmolested retreat of the Russians. The banks of the Duna, near Polotzk, were the scene of some severe encounters, on the 16th and 17th, between Witgenstein and Oudinot in which the success seems to have been nearly balanced." (*Annual Register*, 1812, Vol. 54, p. 172.)



The Russians having taken a strong position at the village of Moskwa, while forming a redoubt on the heights, they were perceived by the enemy. On September 7, the French made a furious attack on the Russians, who were commanded by general Kutusoff. The battle lasted until night; the Russian general, in his official account of the battle of Moskwa, observed, "The result was, that the enemy with his superior force, in no part gained an inch of ground, and that he himself remained at night, master of the field of battle. Seven days after this sanguinary engagement, the French entered Moscow.

The events, subsequent to the entrance of the French into the old capital of the Russian empire, we cannot give a more luminous and comprehensive analysis of, than in the language of the judicious editor of a highly respectable periodical work.

"Of the circumstances attending the capture and conflagration of Moscow, very different accounts have been given. In the French bulletin, which first relates the event, it is said, that the governor, Rostopchin, wished to ruin the city, when he saw it abandoned by the Russian army. That he armed 3000 malefactors from the prisons, and 6000 satellites, and that the French advanced guard, when arrived at the centre of the city, were received with a fire of musketry from the Kremlin, or citadel. That the king of Naples ordered a battery to be opened, which soon dispersed the rabble, and that compleat anarchy prevailing in the city, some drunken madmen ran through its different quarters, every where setting fire to them, the governor having previously carried away the firemen and engines.

“While the shock, occasioned by this terrible catastrophe of one of the most populous cities in Europe, was still recent, the friends to the Russian cause were willing to impute the disaster rather to the fire of the assailants, or to the confusion and anarchy prevailing in a captured city, than to a pre-meditated purpose on the part of the governor or the court; but when the proofs seemed to accumulate of a commanded agency in spreading the flames, arguments were not wanting to shew that on such emergencies, sacrifices of this kind, however severe, were not only justifiable, but were the truest patriotism; and that the depriving an inveterate foe of a comfortable abode during the winter, was a point of such essential consequence, that it could scarcely be gained at too high a price; and the sequel will render probable the justness of this reasoning. It may be added, what could more convincingly prove the fixed determination of the Russian government, to enter into no compromise with the invader, than a resolution rather to destroy the venerable capital of the empire, than to bargain for its safety.

“General Kutusoff, in his report to the emperor Alexander, of the loss of Moscow, mentions however, as one reason for his declining to risk another battle to save it, that its issue would not only have proved destructive to his army, but have reduced Moscow to ashes. He further says, that all the valuables, the stores in the arsenals, and almost all other property, imperial or private, were previously carried away, and that scarcely a single inhabitant remained in the town; which on the other hand looks more like a design of sacrificing the



buildings. The general proceeds to say, that though the abandonment of the capital is very mortifying, yet that considering the advantages which may accrue from it, the circumstance is no longer to be lamented. His purpose is to occupy with his forces, a line which shall command the roads leading to Tula, and Kaluga, and annoy the whole line of the enemy from Smolensko to Moscow. Baron de Wintzingerode was at this time posted to the north of Moscow, in order to cover Tver, and the roads leading to Petersburg, and other places on that side, a powerful Russian force was assembling to the westward, of which the army from Moldavia formed a part.

"The garrison of Riga having been reinforced with a considerable body of troops, its governor lieutenant general Essen, laid a plan for surprising the Prussian corps, posted in three divisions between Miltau and Riga. He moved on September 26, and obliged general D'Yorck to abandon his post, and retreat beyond Miltau. A series of actions took place during some succeeding days, which concluded with the return of the Russians to Riga, on October 2, after having, according to the Prussian accounts, sustained considerable losses. The Prussians saved the park of artillery, destined to the siege of Riga, re-entered Miltau, and re-possessed themselves of the positions they before occupied.

"The impression made at Petersburg by the fall of Moscow, was necessarily that of great alarm; of which the court seems to have participated, even whilst it was endeavouring to tranquillize the people.

A supplement to the Petersburg gazette of October 2, under the title of "For information by special command," acquaints the public, that measures are adopting in that city for the removal of certain necessary articles; not however from any apprehension of danger to the metropolis. And it proceeds to state the circumstances by which its safety is secured.

"Napoleon continued at Moscow, and flattering accounts appeared in the French papers of his success in restoring order, and procuring plenty in the place; at the same time it is certain, that he began to find his situation very uneasy, and severely felt the disappointment resulting from the destruction of so large a portion of the city, and the flight of its inhabitants. An extraordinary and atrocious proof of the acuteness of his feelings on this occasion, appeared in his appointment of a military commission at Moscow, on September 24, to try a number of poor wretches, who had been apprehended in the act of spreading the flames through the city, on the days when the French entered it. Though a principal object of the inquiry was to produce evidence that the conflagration was ordered and directed by the governor, yet these men were capitally condemned for executing commands, to them lawful; and ten of them were put to death with the ordinary forms of justice. After this mean act of vengeance, Napoleon employed himself as if it was his intention to establish winter quarters in the ruins of Moscow. But whatever might be his secret purpose, his determination was precipitated by the event of an action on the 18th of October.



General Kutusoff having received information of the march of a French corps, under general Victor, from Smolensko, to reinforce the grand army, resolved to attack the advanced guard, commanded by Murat, and said to consist of 45,000 men, before they could be supported by the main army. The attack succeeded, and left in the hands of the victor a considerable number of prisoners, and 38 pieces of cannon, which the badness of the roads prevented the French from carrying away. The consequence of this victory was, that on the 22nd the corps of general Winzingerode entered Moscow, which was evacuated by the French garrison in such haste, that they left the hospitals in the power of the foe. About the same time other successes attended the Russian cause. General Witgenstein, after two days' hard fighting with the French, under marshal Gourion St. Cyr, in which he drove the enemy from his entrenchments, and pursued him to Polotzk, carried that place by storm on October 20. A number of prisoners were made in those actions, which cost many men on each side."

"The desertion of Moscow by Napoleon, who quitted it the day after the defeat of Murat, was equally a subject of surprise and speculation at Paris, the public papers of which, exhausted their ingenuity in finding excuses and motives for this event. The first proof of the great change of situation between the two armies, was the mission of Lauriston to Kutusoff, in order to propose an armistice, and treaty of peace. The answer given was, that no negotiation of this kind could be entered upon, till the French had repassed the

Vistula ; and when Lauriston observed in reply, that they must then retire fighting every inch, since the Russian armies were marching on all sides, Kutusoff rejoined, that as the French had not been invited to Moscow, they must get back as they could. Murat is also stated to have gone to the advanced posts, and held a conference with general Milardovitch, probably for the purpose of bringing about an armistice, but from which he derived no satisfaction. At this time the Russians had cleared both banks of the Duna ; as far as Witepsk, from the invaders, and the province of Volhynia was entirely freed from the enemy.

The French grand army first directed its march upon Kaluga ; but finding obstacles in that quarter, the route was changed towards Mojaïsk. The Russians pressing upon it, an engagement was brought on the 24th, in which, as usual, the French claimed the victory. On November 9, Napoleon arrived with the imperial guard at Smolensko. The Russian winter which began on the 7th, with deep snows, greatly added to the difficulties and sufferings of the French. Two intercepted letters from the viceroy of Italy, Eugene Napoleon to the prince of Neufchatel, afford undeniable evidence of the extreme distress to which the retreating French were reduced. In one of those letters he says, " These three last days have cost us two-thirds of the artillery of this corps of the army. Yesterday, about 400 horses died ; and to-day, perhaps, double that number have perished, exclusive of the great number which I have caused to be put on for the military baggage, and for that of individuals. Whole



trains of horses have perished in the harness at once. I must not conceal from your highness, that these three days of suffering have so dispirited the soldiers, that I believe them at this moment very little capable of making any effort. Numbers of men are dead of hunger or cold, and others in despair, have suffered themselves to be taken by the enemy." In this dreadful condition he was again attacked by general Platoff at the head of his cossacks, who took 3000 prisoners, and 62 pieces of cannon. (*Annual Register*, 1812, 174—178.)

Never was the pride of a cruel invader brought down lower than that of Buonaparte, and the change in favor of Russia, was as sudden as it was great and glorious. Unquestionably Divine Providence made the burning of Moscow the salvation of the Russian empire. It is appalling to humanity to reflect on the frightful horrors which presented themselves to view, during the retreat of the French army. Eugene Labaume, who served in Russia under prince Eugene, as captain of the royal engineers, has given a narrative of the affecting and interesting scenes, of which he was an eye witness. To this work which has been translated into English, we refer our readers; in that work the author, whose veracity has never been called in question, asserts, that five hundred thousand men perished, the victims of inordinate ambition and savage barbarity.

On November 10, a division of general Ange-reau's corps were forced to surrender to count Orloff Denizoff, and four days after, an engagement took place between general Witgenstein, and marshal

Victor, in which the French were defeated with great loss ; and on the 16th, marshal Davoust was attacked by the Russians, who obtained a glorious victory : a vast number of the invading, but now retreating army were killed, and 9000 men, including two generals, who were made prisoners, and 70 pieces of cannon were taken. Napoleon was in the field at the commencement of the battle, but he soon quitted it without waiting for the issue. Marshal Ney being on his march to reinforce the shattered army of the French, general Millardovitch was sent to meet him. Ney made a desperate effort to force the Russian lines, in which attempt they were so valiantly repulsed as to occasion 12,000 to lay down their arms, giving up their baggage, cannon, and military chest. Marshal Ney, wounded, with difficulty effected his escape across the Dnieper. On November 28, general Witgenstein captured a division of the French army, consisting of 8800 men.

“ During this time the cold was excessive severe, occasioning dreadful sufferings to the fugitives, and almost annihilating their cavalry. When they arrived at the spot where the roads to Minsk and Wilna divide, they took the route to the latter town, first sending off the wounded with their baggage. In these movements Napoleon always marched in the midst of his guards, whom by care and indulgence he had preserved in tolerable plight. At length, all danger from the pursuers being passed, Napoleon on December 5, having called together his principal officers, and informed them of the appointment of the king of Naples as his lieutenant-general,



set off in a single sledge under the title of the duke of Vicenze. He passed through Wilna, Warsaw, Dresden, Leipsic, and Mentz, and arrived at Paris on the 18th, at half past eleven at night." Thus terminated the expedition of Napoleon Buonaparte to Russia. Surrounded with immense legions, he had quitted his capital with the vain idea of annihilating the power and independence of that great and mighty empire ; but like Xerxes, his foolish ambition was thwarted ; he returned home a miserable fugitive, leaving the frozen plains of Russia, covered with the carcasses of thousands and thousands of his wretched soldiers.

The emperor Alexander, during the whole of this unprincipled invasion of his dominions, acted with a spirit of magnanimity worthy of his illustrious ancestor, Peter the Great. In October, when the French army was retreating, the emperor issued a proclamation, which contained the following admirable observations : " Russians ! At length the enemy of our country, the foe of its independence and freedom, has experienced a portion of that terrible vengeance which his ambition and unprincipled aggression had aroused. From the period of his march from Wilna, his army, great in numbers, assured in valour and discipline, and elated at the remembrance of victories gained in other regions, threatened no less than the subjugation of the Russias. The system which we had thought fit to adopt, strengthened that confidence. The sanguinary battles, fought on his route, and which gave him temporary possession of Smolensko, flattered him with all the illusions of victory. He reached

Moscow, and he believed himself invincible and invulnerable. He now exulted in the idea of reaping the fruit of his toils, of obtaining for his soldiers comfortable winter quarters; and of sending out from thence next spring, fresh forces to ravage and burn our cities, make captives of our countrymen, overthrow our laws and holy religion, and subject every thing to his lawless will. Vain presumptuous hope! Insolent degrading menace! A population of forty millions, attached to their sovereign and country, and devoted to their religion and laws, the least brave man of whom is superior to his confederates and victims, cannot be conquered by any heterogeneous force which he could muster." After alluding to the glorious successes which had attended his arms, the august sovereign continues his address in the following emphatic words: "Much however remains to be done, and that is in your power. Let the line of his retreat be rendered memorable by your honest indignation: destroy every thing which can be of service to him, and our commanders have orders to remunerate you. Render your bridges, your roads impassable. In fine, adopt and execute the suggestions of a brave, wise, and patriotic heart, and shew yourself deserving of the thanks of your country and your sovereign." The brave Hetman general Platoff destroyed a column of the French army at Wilna, on December 11, taking upwards of a thousand men, with a general officer. Platoff then marched his victorious cosacks to Kowno where the French had a garrison; he gained possession of it. In three days only, this brave commander had taken 5000 prisoners, and



21 pieces of cannon. On December 22, the emperor Alexander entered Wilna, general Witgenstein was so fortunate as to cause the Prussians, commanded by general de Yorck, to enter into a convention of neutrality, and Witgenstein marched to Koningsberg, the ancient capital of Prussia, which he took possession of, January 6, 1813. There were taken in this place 1300 prisoners, besides 8000 sick. Platoff a few days after, entered Marienwerder, which prince Eugene and marshal Victor had but a very short time quitted. General Miloradovitch entered Warsaw, February 8, and on the same day Pillau surrendered to the Russians. The Saxons, the allies of Buonaparte, commanded by general Regnier, were defeated, and 2000 men were taken prisoners, and seven pieces of cannon fell into the hands of the Russians. At Breslau, the emperor of Russia and the king of Prussia, had an interview, and on March 11, count Witgenstein made his public entry with the Russian troops into Berlin, and colonel Von Tettenborne with a body of cossacks, took possession of Hamburgh. The Prussian forces having joined the Russians, a battle took place on the left bank of the Elbe, in which the French general Morand was killed, and upwards of 100 officers, and 2200 privates, and nine pieces of cannon were taken from the French army. On April 16, the garrison of Thorn, in which were 200 pieces of cannon, surrendered to the Russian commander count Langeron. Spandau also capitulated. The death of general prince Kutusoff caused count Witgenstein to be made commander in chief of the Russian forces, while general

Blucher had the chief command of the Prussian army. Napoleon having left Paris, took upon him the command of the French troops, and near Lutzen a sanguinary battle was fought, in which Blucher greatly distinguished himself; the French retreated leaving the allies in possession of the field. The French, in consequence of the conduct of the king of Saxony, were in possession of the city of Leipsic. Napoleon having made proposals for a cessation of hostilities, as preliminary to a general congress to be assembled at Prague, the emperor Alexander agreed to an armistice, during which time Buonaparte took up his residence at Dresden. The numbers appointed on the part of the belligerent powers, met at Prague; but the negotiations were abruptly terminated, and the most vigorous preparations were made for resuming hostilities. Count Barclay de Tolly was appointed commander in chief of the allied armies, and the power of the allies was strengthened by the formal declaration of war by Austria against France; the crown prince of Sweden had also guaranteed his powerful assistance. To form a plan of co-operation, the emperors of Austria and Russia, and the king of Prussia had an interview at Prague, in August 1813. On the 21st of that month general Blucher was attacked near Buntslau, and after a severe contest was compelled to retreat. Napoleon was with an army of 130,000 men within the walls of Dresden, which was strongly fortified. The allied army having advanced before that capital, an assault was made on August 27, but it proved ineffectual, with the loss, as the French affirmed, of 4000 men. The allied army was en-



camped on a very extended position, on the heights surrounding Dresden. Napoleon with an immense park of artillery moved to the attack of the allies. A severe engagement followed, in which the allies sustained considerable loss. It was in this attack that the celebrated general Moreau was mortally wounded with a cannon shot while conversing with the emperor Alexander.

At Kulm near Toplitz the French were totally defeated; general Vandamme, and six other general officers, with 10,000 men, being taken prisoners, with a great quantity of baggage, and 60 pieces of artillery. Marshal Macdonald was also defeated, on August 26, by general Blucher, who took 13,000 prisoners, including three generals; there were also captured 103 pieces of cannon, a great quantity of ammunition and provisions, and two eagles; and in a few days after, that gallant commander drove the French wholly out of Silesia.

On September 6, the crown prince of Sweden having collected the Swedish and Russian armies upon the heights of Lobessin, was informed that the enemy's whole army amounting to 70,000 men, commanded by marshal Ney, prince of Moskwa was marching to Juterbock. He directly sent general Bulow with the Prussians to attack the French, before Tauentzein; the French being vigorously attacked, retreated, and were pursued, sustaining a loss in killed and wounded, of from 16, to 18,000 men, with more than 50 pieces of cannon, and 400 ammunition waggons. In this battle, which took place near Denuwitz, the Prussians had from 4, to 5000 killed and wounded. On September 16, count

Waldmoden made an attack on the enemy, whom he entirely defeated and dispersed with a loss of near 2000 in killed and wounded, 1500 prisoners, with eight pieces of artillery. The crown prince having crossed the Elbe, had an engagement with general Bertrand, whom he routed with considerable loss. General Czernicheff entered Cassel on September 30. The pretended king of Westphalia, Jerome Buonaparte, having left that place but two hours before, and general Téttenborne also entered Bremen on October 14.

On October 7, Napoleon quitted Dresden, and established his post at Rochlitz, twenty-five miles from Leipsic. The crown prince having formed a junction with Blucher, the joint armies passed the Saale, and Blucher posted himself at Halle, he then advanced and drove the enemy from several strong positions; at one of the French posts, a dreadful contest ensued; it was at a place named Mockern, and it was taken and retaken five times. In these attacks, the French lost 12,000 men, killed, wounded, and taken prisoners, one eagle, and forty pieces of cannon. On October 16, the combined army made a general attack, to the south of Leipsic: it terminated for that day, with great loss both to the enemy and the allies. On the morning of the 18th, the grand attack upon the city was made. General Winzingerode obtained possession of the heights of Taucha, taking 3000 prisoners. Soon after a party of Saxon artillery joined the allies, and pointed their guns against the French; and two Westphalian regiments of Hussars also deserted. In this ever memorable battle of Leipsic, the French lost 40,000



men in killed, wounded, and prisoners, among whom were many generals, and 65 pieces of artillery were taken from the enemy. The next morning, the king of Saxony sent a flag of truce, to the emperor Alexander, requesting him to spare Leipsic ; but the emperor treated the embassy with disdain, and immediately ordered an attack on that place, which was taken after a feeble resistance. Napoleon had left it only two hours ere it surrendered. The king of Saxony with all his court, 30,000 French, 22,000 sick and wounded were made prisoners, and all the magazines, artillery, and stores, fell into the hands of the conquerors. The emperor of Russia, the king of Prussia, and the crown prince of Sweden, each at the head of their respective troops, made their entry from different points, and met in the great square, amidst the universal acclamations of an immense assemblage of people. General Blucher was immediately created a Field Marshal, by his sovereign.

The emperor Alexander made his triumphant entry into Frankfort, on November 5. The destiny of Buonaparte was now fixed, and the hour of retribution was come. The emperor of Russia who had liberated the king of Prussia from his chains, who had drawn the emperor of Austria from his state of servile submission, marched on a glorious conqueror until he found himself in the metropolis of his invading foe. By the treaty of Fontainebleau, the sovereign authority of Buonaparte was annihilated, and by a subsequent arrangement, he was exiled to the island of Elba. The magnanimous Alexander, after atchieving such deeds of glory,

paid a visit to England, in company with the king of Prussia. His sister, the duchess of Oldenburg, having previously arrived, he was accompanied by the brave Platoff, while prince Blucher was in the suit of the king of Prussia. Never since the chivalrous days of Edward the third, was such a proud æra for England; and the behaviour of the emperor Alexander gained him the enthusiastic admiration of all ranks and classes of people. The corporation of the metropolis of the British empire, was honoured with the company of three sovereigns, at a splendid banquet at Guildhall, the prince regent of England, the emperor of Russia, and the king of Prussia. The chaplain that year (1814) to the lord mayor, sir W. Domville, by a singular coincidence of circumstances, was a gentleman well known for his judicious works on the Russian empire, and who himself had been chaplain to the British factory at St. Petersburg, the Rev. W. Tooke. F. R. S. The year on which the illustrious sovereigns visited England was the centenary year of the accession of the illustrious house of Hanover to the throne of Great Britain.

Since the unprovoked invasion of the Russian dominions by Buonaparte, the power of the emperor Alexander has been greatly augmented, Poland has been placed under his dominion, he having the title of Grand Duke of Poland, and by the marriage of his sister, the grand duchess of Russia with the hereditary prince of Orange. The kingdom of the Netherlands is drawn into close commercial and political relation with Russia. An American newspaper (The commercial Advertiser) of a very recent



date (1817) contains some very shrewd and judicious observations on this subject.

"Spain is about ceding the island of Majorca to Russia. This will give Russia a footing in the Mediterranean, which has been long desirable. Placed in the centre of business, in the vicinity of France, Italy, Spain, and Africa, the enterprise and commercial resources of the Russian empire, will form that island into a depôt, which will prove the source of great commercial benefits, and probably lay the foundation of future commercial jealousies and disputes. Russia is progressing with rapid strides towards the attainment of power, which when once fixed, Europe will never be able to arrest from her. The eye that has been so long fixed on European Turkey, continues its ardent gaze on that rich and desirable country; the blow which has been many years maturing, will shortly be struck, and with complete success; for with the resources of the Russians, it would be a task of little difficulty to drive the Turks out of Europe.

"Having once possession of Turkey and Greece, the pass of the Dardanelles, and the free egress into the Mediterranean from the Black Sea, together with the islands of the Archipelago, and the island of Majorca, so near to the gut of Gibraltar, these powerful additions in the south, and the great northern channels and possessions on the Baltic, will satisfy the allied sovereigns, that they have developed the resources of the Russians to their manifest disadvantage; and the Russian influence in Germany and Holland, together with the political holy league, will unite to place the power of

that empire, beyond injury and controul, and which the strongest confederation will not be able to shake."

Alexander has ever evinced an ardent desire to promote the welfare and happiness of his subjects. He has established Bible societies throughout his vast dominions; combining the heroic qualities of his illustrious ancestor, Peter the Great, with the wisdom of Catharine, he is likely to acquire a glory far more transcendent than any of his predecessors.

The encouragement the emperor has given to literature, appears from the following circumstance.

"The number of works published in Russia during five years, from 1801, to 1806, appears to have been 1304 Russian performances including pamphlets, fugitive pieces, &c. Of these, 756 were original works, and 548 were translations. The works on Theology were 213, of which 175 were originals." *Gentleman's Magazine*, vol. 85. page 349.

The Royal Humane Society of London voted a medal to the emperor Alexander, for having saved one of his subjects from being drowned, and when in London waited upon him with an address. That so amiable a sovereign may long sway the sceptre of the ancient Czar's of Muscovy, is to be devoutly wished, not only for the happiness of his subjects, but for the peace and repose of Europe.











STEPHEN CONWAY  
BOOKBINDER  
401 BEACON ROAD  
BRADFORD  
BD6 3NB  
TELE: BFD 0274 571197







RODGER FRIEDMAN ☉ RARE BOOK STUDIO

ONE MYSTIC CIRCLE • TUXEDO, NEW YORK • 10987

PHONE: 845 351 5067 • E-MAIL: RF@RAREBOOKSTUDIO.COM

Hunter, C. G. **Russia:.. being a complete picture of that empire; including a full description of their government, laws, religion, commerce, manners, customs &c.; with the history of Russia, civil, military, and ecclesiastical from the earliest period to the present time; containing ample memorials of the reign of the illustrious Emperor Alexander I.** London: T. Crabbe, 1817.

22 cm; 389 pages, folding hand colored map and 8 (of 9) hand colored plates of costumes and city views. (Lacks plate of "Peasant's Wife.")

Recent half calf over marbled paper-covered boards by Stephen Conway. Scattered foxing, heavier at beginning and end, but generally clean.



